

**PRACTICE
MAKES
PERFECT**

**MORE THAN
135,000
SOLD**

Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions

SECOND EDITION

- *Learn when and why each pronoun and preposition is used in Spanish*
- *Build your language skills and communicate with confidence*
- *Practice with more than 110 entertaining exercises*

Dorothy Richmond

**Free Online
Audio Answer Key**

PRACTICE MAKES PERFECT

Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions

SECOND EDITION

Dorothy Richmond



New York Chicago San Francisco Lisbon London Madrid Mexico City
Milan New Delhi San Juan Seoul Singapore Sydney Toronto

Copyright © 2010 by The McGraw-Hill Companies, Inc. All rights reserved. Except as permitted under the United States Copyright Act of 1976, no part of this publication may be reproduced or distributed in any form or by any means, or stored in a database or retrieval system, without the prior written permission of the publisher.

ISBN: 978-0-07174322-8

MHID: 0-07-1743227

The material in this eBook also appears in the print version of this title: ISBN: 978-0-07-173917-7, MHID: 0-07-173917-3.

All trademarks are trademarks of their respective owners. Rather than put a trademark symbol after every occurrence of a trademarked name, we use names in an editorial fashion only, and to the benefit of the trademark owner, with no intention of infringement of the trademark. Where such designations appear in this book, they have been printed with initial caps.

McGraw-Hill eBooks are available at special quantity discounts to use as premiums and sales promotions, or for use in corporate training programs. To contact a representative please e-mail us at bulksales@mcgraw-hill.com.

TERMS OF USE

This is a copyrighted work and The McGraw-Hill Companies, Inc. (“McGraw-Hill”) and its licensors reserve all rights in and to the work. Use of this work is subject to these terms. Except as permitted under the Copyright Act of 1976 and the right to store and retrieve one copy of the work, you may not decompile, disassemble, reverse engineer, reproduce, modify, create derivative works based upon, transmit, distribute, disseminate, sell, publish or sublicense the work or any part of it without McGraw-Hill’s prior consent. You may use the work for your own noncommercial and personal use; any other use of the work is strictly prohibited. Your right to use the work may be terminated if you fail to comply with these terms.

THE WORK IS PROVIDED “AS IS.” MCGRAW-HILL AND ITS LICENSORS MAKE NO GUARANTEES OR WARRANTIES AS TO THE ACCURACY, ADEQUACY OR COMPLETENESS OF OR RESULTS TO BE

ACCURACY, ADEQUACY OR COMPLETENESS OF OR RESULTS TO BE OBTAINED FROM USING THE WORK, INCLUDING ANY INFORMATION THAT CAN BE ACCESSED THROUGH THE WORK VIA HYPERLINK OR OTHERWISE, AND EXPRESSLY DISCLAIM ANY WARRANTY, EXPRESS OR IMPLIED, INCLUDING BUT NOT LIMITED TO IMPLIED WARRANTIES OF MERCHANTABILITY OR FITNESS FOR A PARTICULAR PURPOSE. McGraw-Hill and its licensors do not warrant or guarantee that the functions contained in the work will meet your requirements or that its operation will be uninterrupted or error free. Neither McGraw-Hill nor its licensors shall be liable to you or anyone else for any inaccuracy, error or omission, regardless of cause, in the work or for any damages resulting therefrom. McGraw-Hill has no responsibility for the content of any information accessed through the work. Under no circumstances shall McGraw-Hill and/or its licensors be liable for any indirect, incidental, special, punitive, consequential or similar damages that result from the use of or inability to use the work, even if any of them has been advised of the possibility of such damages. This limitation of liability shall apply to any claim or cause whatsoever whether such claim or cause arises in contract, tort or otherwise.

Audio Answer Key

Answers to all exercises are available online in audio text format. Spoken by native Spanish speakers, the 1½ hours of audio recordings provide a convenient way to improve your Spanish pronunciation and listening comprehension as you check your answers.

1. Select the LANGUAGES menu option at mhprofessional.com, or, for a shortcut, go to <http://www.audiostudyplayer.com/>.
2. Launch the Audio Study Player. (You may need to enable pop-ups within your browser.)
3. Locate the answer key under:
Spanish Practice Makes Perfect Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions (Parts I and II)
4. Select the required chapter, then click on the appropriate exercise in the playlist. Corresponding text appears in the adjacent lyric panel.

To Daisy Astrid Richmond and Lily Solveig Richmond

Contents

[Preface](#)

[Acknowledgments](#)

[Introduction](#)

[PRONOUNS](#)

[Subject pronouns](#)

[Interrogative pronouns](#)

[Prepositional pronouns](#)

[Possessive pronouns](#)

[Demonstrative pronouns](#)

[Numbers as pronouns](#)

[Adjective pronouns](#)

[Relative pronouns](#)

[Direct object pronouns](#)

[Indirect object pronouns](#)

[Reflexive object pronouns](#)

[Double-object pronoun order: RID](#)

[Reciprocal pronouns](#)

[The pronoun se and the passive voice](#)

[PREPOSITIONS](#)

[Prepositions and prepositional phrases](#)

Para and por

Prepositions and verbs

[APPENDIX A The eight parts of speech](#)

[APPENDIX B Pronouns](#)

[APPENDIX C Prepositions](#)

[Answer key](#)

Preface

Pronouns and prepositions are two aspects of language study that often fall through the cracks. It is not unusual to encounter individuals who have studied Spanish for years and whose vocabulary and ability to conjugate verbs are impressive, yet who trip over pronouns, unable to distinguish between direct and indirect object pronouns, and who don't really "get" **para** and **por**.

To say that Spanish pronouns and prepositions are undertaught and underlearned is an understatement. Mastery of them is essential for all students who desire to communicate with native speakers of Spanish or who simply wish to absorb the wealth of literature—from the classics to the latest fan magazines—in Spanish. Though vastly different on the surface, mastery of both requires meticulous attention to detail, careful study of both vocabulary and theory, and almost endless repetitive practice and use, until that magic moment when one simply uses pronouns and prepositions without thought, without effort, without regret for the time and energy spent learning them.

Current books on the market invariably fall short of providing sufficient discussion, examples, and exercises that allow the student to properly learn how to work with Spanish pronouns and prepositions. *Practice Makes Perfect: Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions* meets the need for explaining and practicing these two vital parts of speech.

The challenge of this text, for both the author and the student, is to take on these two very important, yet often ignored, aspects of the Spanish language. For every student who takes this challenge, I offer you congratulations and wish you great academic fortune.

Acknowledgments

It is an enormous honor to have a textbook go into its second edition, because it means that the book has done its intended job well. Thus, my first thanks go to the many students who made such extensive use of the first edition that this second edition was needed. I would be remiss not to acknowledge again those persons who were instrumental in the preparation of the first edition: Lisa Nilles, Curt Roy, John Hering, Susana Blanco Iglesias, Joe Thurston, Elizabeth Millán, and Frank Merrill, my former student at the University of St. Thomas, whose persistence in requesting exercises and information on pronouns and prepositions served as the inspiration for this book. Each of these people is unique and special in my life.

Preparing this second edition has been more a solo act—due in no small part to the prior assistance of those mentioned above—yet one impossible to execute without Marisa L’Heureux at McGraw-Hill, who helped get my files in working order; Terry Yokota and Dan Franklin, the wonderful copy editors and typographers who organized the pages and made them beautiful; and Christopher Brown, my editor and friend at McGraw-Hill for many years, who oversaw the production of this book and once again renewed my appreciation for his intelligence and kindness.

At home, there are Martin, my husband, and Daisy and Lily, our daughters, who provide the framework for my life.

I offer my sincere thanks—again and again—to all of these delightful and exceptional people. I am honored to know and be associated with each of them.

Introduction

In order to work with any system—a software program, a car, an organization, or a language—one must know its constituent parts, how to use them, and what each part means and contributes to the whole. This book deals primarily with Spanish pronouns and prepositions, which are crucial to the Spanish language system.

What is a pronoun?

A pronoun replaces an understood noun. Therefore, in order to use a pronoun, the speaker/writer and listener/reader must already be in agreement on what or whom the noun refers to. If you breeze into a room and announce, “I saw him last night,” you will be greeted by blank stares and the question “Whom did you see?” On the other hand, if you made this same announcement after you and your friends had been talking about the ghost of Elvis, you still might get some stares, but everyone would understand whom you meant. And being understood—putting what is going on in your mind into someone else’s mind—is the essence and aim of all communication.

Pronouns allow us to streamline our conversations: They make our conversations less wordy, but more interesting. As you begin to work with Spanish pronouns, you may at times find them frustrating, even overwhelming. Keep going. They take time to learn, and other books currently on the market do not give them enough attention; nor do these texts offer students sufficient explanations, examples, and exercises.

[Part I](#) of *Practice Makes Perfect: Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions* offers you 14 chapters about pronouns in Spanish, from the everyday subject pronoun to the specialized reciprocal pronoun. Each chapter contains an abundance of explanations, examples, and exercises. (You’ll find answers to all the exercises at the back of the book.)

What is a preposition?

A preposition reveals a relationship, typically between two nouns or pronouns.

This relationship may be one of place, time, direction, manner, or connection.

It is difficult to say or write much of importance or clarity without using prepositions. It is even harder to “fake it,” when you don’t know the correct preposition to use. Nouns and verbs often have synonyms, or you can describe them in other terms or even just point to or demonstrate “à la charades.” Prepositions, however, usually have no substitutes, and it is crucial to know prepositions in order to get your point across.

Imagine trying to say “John lives with Matt” in Spanish if you don’t know the word for “with.” Or “I have gifts for Daisy and Lily” if you don’t know how to say “for.” “To the right of,” “to the left of,” “in front of,” and so on—all these prepositions need to be learned and mastered in order to be a confident, comfortable speaker of Spanish.

Prepositions are brought out in all their glory and forms in the three chapters of [Part II](#) of *Practice Makes Perfect: Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions*. In the first chapter, you are presented with the basic vocabulary and multiple uses of prepositions, as well as the sometimes subtle differences among certain prepositions that may appear to be interchangeable at first. The second chapter is devoted to **para** and **por**, two prepositions with frequently similar meanings, but distinct uses. In the third chapter, you will learn about the special relationship that many prepositions have with verbs.

Each chapter in [Part II](#) contains detailed explanations of the material, followed by examples and exercises. (Answers to these exercises, too, can be found at the end of the text.)

The appendices contain concise explanations and summaries, along with valuable charts, that provide the basis for your study of Spanish pronouns and prepositions. For example, [Appendix A](#), “The eight parts of speech,” arms you with the grammatical terms you need and gives you the ability to identify all eight parts of speech when working with the language. Appendixes B and C provide comprehensive summaries that can serve as reference tools.

I sincerely hope that this text will help those who study Spanish, at any level, to achieve (and maybe surpass?) their goals of speaking, writing, and reading this incredibly rich language with greater competence and confidence. Enjoy the language. Play with it. Work with it. Make it a part of you. ¡Buena suerte!

I PRONOUNS

1 Subject pronouns

FUNCTION

To replace a noun that names the subject (the actor) in a clause or sentence

SPANISH PLACEMENT

At the beginning of a clause or sentence; before the verb

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“I,” “you,” “he,” “she,” “it,” “we,” “they”

Pronouns replace nouns that are understood either because of previous use or from context. In English, there are seven subject pronouns (also called personal pronouns): “I,” “you,” “he,” “she,” “it,” “we,” and “they.” In Spanish, there are twelve. The difference is due to two pronouns that take gender (**nosotros** and **vosotros**) and four pronouns in Spanish for the single English pronoun “you.”

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
yo	<i>I</i>	nosotros	<i>we</i> (masc., masc. & fem.)
		nosotras	<i>we</i> (fem.)
tú	<i>you</i> (informal)	vosotros	<i>you</i> (informal, masc., masc. & fem.)
		vosotras	<i>you</i> (informal, fem.)
él	<i>he</i>	ellos	<i>they</i> (masc., masc. & fem.)
ella	<i>she</i>	ellas	<i>they</i> (fem.)
usted	<i>you</i> (formal)	ustedes	<i>you</i> (formal)

Note that the pronouns for Spanish “you” differ from those for English “you” in some significant ways: **1.** The pronouns **usted** and **ustedes** are often abbreviated in text. **Ud.** or **Vd.** is used for **usted**; **Uds.** or **Vds.** is used for **ustedes**.

The informal plural **vosotros** form is used primarily in Peninsular Spanish (Spain), while throughout Latin America, **ustedes** is used in both formal and informal situations.

The subject pronoun replaces the noun that names the subject (the actor) in a sentence, and the conjugated verb must agree in number with that subject. The Spanish regular verb endings are given below. Use this chart of verb endings together with the preceding chart of subject pronouns to help you do the first exercise.

-ar		-er		-ir	
-o	-amos	-o	-emos	-o	-imos
-as	-áis	-es	-éis	-es	-ís
-a	-an	-e	-en	-e	-en

1.1 EJERCICIO

Complete each of the following clauses with the correct subject pronoun. All of the verbs used below are regular **-ar**, **-er**, or **-ir** verbs.

- _____ hablo
- _____ comemos
- _____ viven
- _____ canta
- _____ abrís
- _____ vendemos
- _____ escribe
- _____ describen 9. _____
- practicáis 10. _____ estudias
11. _____ ama
12. _____ sufro
13. _____ bebes
14. _____ tomáis
15. _____ lee
16. _____ creo
17. _____ llegas
18. _____ comprendemos
19. _____ trabajan 20. _____
- miras

The use of subject pronouns in Spanish—when and how they are used—differs from English usage, even when the referent is clearly the same.

It is often not necessary to state or write the subject pronoun in Spanish, because the conjugated form of the verb indicates the subject (for example, the verb ending **-o** signifies the subject pronoun **yo**). In English, however, we must include the subject pronoun with the verb. In Spanish, it is only necessary to include the subject pronoun for one of the following reasons.

a. *Clarity.* In the third person, including the subject pronoun allows you to differentiate between **él** and **ella** or **ellos** and **ustedes**, for example.

b. *Emphasis.* To emphasize the difference between two subjects, even though they are both understood, include the subject pronoun.

¡Yo vivo en una casa, pero tú vives
en un palacio!

I live in a house, but you live in a palace!

There is no Spanish word for the subject pronoun “it.” When “it” (or its plural “they”) is the subject of a sentence or phrase, “it” (or “they”) is understood.

¿De qué color es tu casa?
Es blanca.

*What color is your house?
It is white.*

¿Dónde están los coches?
Están en el garaje.

*Where are the cars?
They are in the garage.*

1.2 EJERCICIO

Complete each phrase with either the correct subject pronoun or the correct verb ending, according to the information given. Each of the verbs below is a frequently used irregular verb.

_____ tengo

_____ tienes

él quier _____

nosotros est _____

vosotros sal _____

_____ quieren

yo pued _____

ella vien _____

_____ somos

b. tú sal _____

c. usted jueg _____

d. _____ pongo

e. ustedes pon _____

f. ellos dic _____

g. _____ estáis

h. _____

6. _____ oyes

7. ellas pued _____

8. nosotros ve _____

9. _____ oímos

10. _____ veis

2 Interrogative pronouns

FUNCTION

To introduce a question for which the desired answer is a noun or pronoun that names a person or thing

At the beginning of a question

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“Who?” “(To) Whom?” “Whose?” “What?” “Which?”

The interrogative pronoun is used to ask a specific type of question. The answer sought is a noun or pronoun (naming either a person or a thing): “*Who* is in the soundproof booth?” “*To whom* did you send the poison pen letter?” “*Whose* dog did this?” “*What* is this?” “*Which* do you prefer?”

¿Quién? ¿Quiénes?

Who?

¿A quién? ¿A quiénes?

(To) Whom?

¿De quién? ¿De quiénes?

Whose?

¿Qué?

What? Which?

¿Cuál? ¿Cuáles?

Which? What?

In Spanish, **¿Qué?** often precedes a noun, and **¿Cuál?** often precedes a verb or a prepositional phrase. Note that all Spanish interrogative pronouns, with the exception of **¿Qué?**, have both a singular and a plural form. The verb must agree in number with this form.

Who? ¿Quién? ¿Quiénes?

When your question is about people, and the answer you seek involves a name or names, you ask “Who?”, as in “*Who* has the cat? *John* has the cat.” (“John” is the subject of the answer.) In these cases, in Spanish, use **¿Quién?** (or **¿Quiénes?** when you are seeking the names of two or more people).

Singular subject

¿Quién vive aquí?

Pedro Morales vive aquí.

Who lives here?

Pedro Morales lives here.

Plural subject

¿Quiénes trabajan aquí?
Pedro y Felipe trabajan aquí.

Who works here?
Pedro and Felipe work here.

With ser [sing.]

¿Quién es él?
Él es Pedro Morales.

Who is he?
He is Pedro Morales.

With ser [pl.]

¿Quiénes son ellos?
Ellos son los carpinteros.

Who are they?
They are the carpenters.

2.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate the following questions into Spanish.

Who is she? _____

Who are they [m.] ? _____

Who are you [sing.] ? _____

Who are you [pl.] ? _____

Who works here? _____

Who watches television? _____

Who speaks Spanish here? _____

Who doesn't live here? _____

Who writes the book? _____

l. Who is your friend? _____

Whom? ¿A quién? ¿A quiénes?

To ask the name of a person who is the recipient of an action (as the direct object of the verb), use “Whom?”, as in the sentence “*Whom* do you love?” The personal **a** must be included before the interrogative pronoun **¿quién?** (or **¿quiénes?** if you suspect that the answer involves more than one name).

¿A quién ves?
Veo a Pedro Morales.

Whom do you see?
I see Pedro Morales.

Note that the structure for use of the interrogative pronoun is parallel to that of the answer, where the **a** in the sentence **Veo a Pedro Morales** is the personal **a**.

To ask the name of a person who is the indirect recipient of an action (expressed as the object of a preposition), use the preposition **a** (“to”), as in the sentence “*To whom* are you writing?” The preposition **a** (“to”) must be included before the interrogative pronoun **¿quién?** (or **¿quiénes?**).

¿**A quiénes** escribes?
Escribo a Pedro y a Manolo.

To whom are you writing?
I'm writing to Pedro and Manolo.

The structure for use of the interrogative pronoun is parallel to that of the answer here as well, because the **a** in the sentence **Escribo a Pedro y a Manolo** represents the English preposition “to.”

NOTE The personal **a** is not used with the verbs **ser**, **estar**, and **tener**.

2.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción For the following translations, use the second-person singular form of the present tense verb.

Whom [sing.] do you love? _____

Whom [sing.] do you see (ver) ? _____

Whom [sing.] are you watching (mirar) ? _____

Whom [pl.] are you watching? _____

For whom [sing.] are you looking (buscar) ? _____

For whom [pl.] are you looking? _____

To whom [sing.] do you listen? _____

To whom [pl.] do you listen? _____

Whom [sing.] do you know (conocer) ? _____

l. Whom [pl.] do you know? _____

Whose? ¿De quién? ¿De quiénes?

In English, to identify the owner of something, you ask “Whose?” In Spanish, use the phrase **¿De quién?** (or **¿De quiénes?** if you think that the answer involves more than one name). In simple questions, the phrase—usually followed by a form of **ser**—is uncomplicated.

¿**De quién** es este libro?
¿**De quiénes** son esos boletos?

Whose book is this?
Whose tickets are those?

However, the use of the phrase does not translate directly in more complicated questions, and it is necessary to rephrase the question. For example, “Whose grandmother lives here?” becomes **¿De quién es la abuela que vive aquí?** (literally, “Of whom is the grandmother that lives here?”).

¿De **quién** son los vecinos que no hablan inglés?

Whose neighbors don't speak English?
(lit., *Of whom are the neighbors that don't speak English?*)

¿De **quién** era el lápiz que pediste prestado?

Whose pencil did you borrow?
(lit., *Of whom was the pencil that you borrowed?*)

¿De **quiénes** son los sombreros que están en la mesa?

Whose hats are on the table?
(lit., *Of whom are the hats that are on the table?*)

¿De **quiénes** son los videos más populares ahora?

Whose videos are the most popular now?
(lit., *Of whom are the most popular videos now?*)

2.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate each of the following questions from English to Spanish, using singular interrogative pronouns unless otherwise indicated. The Spanish syntax is given in parentheses after the question.*

Whose car is this? (Of whom is this car?)

Whose keys (la llave) are on the table? (Of whom are the keys that are on the table?)

Whose [pl.] cars are dirty? (Of whom are the cars that are dirty?)

Whose [pl.] children [f.] are reading these books? (Of whom are the children that are reading these books?)

Whose cat is drinking (beber) the milk? (Of whom is the cat that is drinking the milk?)

Whose neighbors (el vecino) live in the blue house? (Of whom are the neighbors that live in the blue house?)

Whose [pl.] students are the most intelligent? (Of whom are the most intelligent students?)

Whose car doesn't run (funcionar) ? (Of whom is the car that doesn't run?)

Whose coat is this? (Of whom is this coat?)

!). Whose parrot (el loro) speaks Italian? (Of whom is the parrot that speaks Italian?)

.. Whose [pl.] CDs (el disco compacto) are these? (Of whom are these CDs?)

!.. Whose backpack (la mochila) is that? (Of whom is that backpack?)

Which? ¿Qué? ¿Cuál? ¿Cuáles?

To limit a group of items or to ask someone to choose from among a number of items, you use “Which?” or “What?” in your question. In English, “Which?” generally precedes a noun (“Which cookbook do you want?”), while the limiting “What?” usually precedes a verb (“What is the best cookbook for breads?”).

In Spanish, the opposite is usually true. If the interrogative pronoun is followed by a noun, use **¿Qué?** If the interrogative pronoun is followed by a verb or a prepositional phrase, use **¿Cuál?** or **¿Cuáles?** In the context of **¿Cuál?** + verb, **¿Cuál?** usually means “Which one?”

¿Qué vestido prefieres?
Prefiero el vestido largo.

*Which dress do you prefer?
I prefer the long dress.*

¿Cuál prefieres?
Prefiero el vestido largo.

*Which (one) do you prefer?
I prefer the long dress.*

¿Cuál de los vestidos prefieres?
Prefiero el vestido rojo.

*Which of the dresses do you prefer?
I prefer the red dress.*

¿Cuáles prefieres?
Prefiero los zapatos negros.

*Which ones do you prefer?
I prefer the black shoes.*

¿Cuál de las pinturas es de Miró?
¿Qué pintura es de Miró?

*Which (one) of the paintings is by Miró?
Which painting is by Miró?*

¿Qué número de teléfono es correcto?

Which telephone number is correct?

2.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate the following questions. Use the second-person singular

Spanish form for English you.

Which book is more (más) interesting? _____

Which actor is more popular? _____

Which girl (la chica) is your cousin? _____

Which food has more fat (la grasa) ? _____

Which store sells more clothing? _____

*Which do you eat more, chicken (el pollo) or fish
_____ (el pescado) ?*

Which is more popular? _____

Which ones do you wear more? _____

Which shoes do you wear more? _____

1. Which hat is more comfortable (cómodo) ? _____

.. Which of the hats is more comfortable?

1. Which program (el programa) do you watch?

1. Which [pl.] of the new programs do you watch?

1. Which ones do you watch? _____

¿Qué? vs. ¿Cuál?

Whether to use **¿Qué?** or **¿Cuál?** in Spanish questions confounds many speakers of English. In a nutshell, questions beginning with **¿Qué?** ask for a definition, whereas questions that begin with **¿Cuál?** ask the respondent to limit his or her answer to one of many possibilities. Consider the following questions and their literal implications as displayed in the answers:

¿Qué es tu nombre?

Mi nombre es la palabra que la gente usa cuando me llama.

What is your name?

My name is the word that people use when they call to me.

¿Cuál es tu nombre?

Mi nombre es Penélope.

What is your name? (Which one of all the names that exist is yours?)

My name is Penelope.

¿Cuál es tu número de teléfono?

Mi número es 555-1212.

What is your telephone number? (Which one of the millions of telephone numbers out there is yours?)

My number is 555-1212.

As you can see, **¿Qué?** requests a literal answer, and **¿Cuál?** asks for a selection from a large pool of possible answers.

To determine whether to use **¿Qué?** or **¿Cuál?**, consider the following: ♦ Generally speaking, **¿Qué?** precedes a noun and **¿Cuál?** precedes a verb.

If you want a definition, use **¿Qué?**

If there are many possible answers and you want to know the correct answer in a particular situation—that is, the limited answer—use **¿Cuál?**

2.5 EJERCICIO

Mark whether you would use **¿Qué?** or **¿Cuál?** in the following questions. Then translate the questions. Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

	¿Qué?	¿Cuál?
1. <i>What day is today?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
2. <i>What is the date (la fecha) today?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
3. <i>What is his name?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
4. <i>What time (la hora) is it?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
5. <i>What is your reason (la razón) for this (esto)?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
6. <i>What is that (eso)?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
	¿Qué?	¿Cuál?
7. <i>Which book do you want?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
8. <i>Which ones do you want?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
9. <i>Which woman is your friend?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
10. <i>What does this mean (significar)?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
11. <i>What is the answer (la respuesta)?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
12. <i>What do you want to know (saber)?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
13. <i>What is your name?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		
14. <i>What is your address (la dirección)?</i>	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
<hr/>		

3 Prepositional pronouns

FUNCTION

To replace a noun that names a person or thing following a preposition, serving as the object of that preposition

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Immediately after a preposition

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“me,” “you,” “him,” “her,” “it,” “us,” “them”

Standard prepositional pronouns

The pronouns that follow prepositions are nearly identical to the subject pronouns. The only change comes with the first-and second-person singular forms **mí** and **ti**. In this context, **mí** takes an accent over the **i** to distinguish it from **mi**, the possessive adjective, which means “my.”

SINGULAR PLURAL

mí

me

PLURAL

nosotros

us (masc., masc. & fem.)

nosotras

us (fem.)

SINGULAR

ti

you (informal)

PLURAL

vosotros

you (informal, masc., masc. & fem.)

vosotras

you (informal, fem.)

SINGULAR

él

him

PLURAL

ellos

them, it (masc.)

SINGULAR

ella

her, it (fem.)

PLURAL

ellas

them, it (fem.)

SINGULAR

usted

you (formal)

PLURAL

ustedes

you (formal)

SINGULAR

ello

it (masc., neut.)

Note that after a preposition, the word **ello** means “it” when the referent is an object, event, or idea that is either masculine or neuter; use **ella** for a feminine referent.

El accidente sucedió hace un año.

The accident happened a year ago.

Él escribió un cuento acerca de **ello**.

He wrote a story about it.

Compramos una cama nueva y tenemos
las almohadas perfectas para **ella**.

*We're buying a new bed, and we
have the perfect pillows for it.*

The following exercise includes several frequently used prepositions. For fuller discussion and a more complete vocabulary listing of prepositions, consult

[Part II](#), Prepositions.

3.1 EJERCICIO

Use these prepositions in translating the following sentences. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

VOCABULARIO	a la derecha de	to the right of
	a la izquierda de	to the left of
	acerca de	about
	cerca de	near
	de	from, of
	debajo de	underneath
	delante de	in front of
	detrás de	behind
	encima de	on top of
	para	for

He has a book for me. _____

I have a gift for you. _____

What do you have for me? _____

The table is from her. _____

I buy my books from them. _____

He is in front of it [m.]. _____

You are behind him. _____

He lives near me. _____

The carpet (la alfombra) is underneath us [f.].

1. He lives near you [pl.]. _____

2. He writes a book about her. _____

3. We walk behind them. _____

4. She dances to the right of me. _____

5. They work to the left of you. _____

6. The food is in front of us. _____

Pronouns with con

Certain pronouns undergo some changes when they follow the preposition **con**

(“with”). Those changes are as follows:

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
conmigo	<i>with me</i>	con nosotros, con nosotras	<i>with us</i>
contigo	<i>with you</i>	con vosotros, con vosotras	<i>with you</i>
consigo	<i>with him, with her, with you</i>	consigo	<i>with them, with you</i>

In certain situations, however, the standard prepositional pronouns are also used with **con** (“with”) in the third person, as shown here:

con él	<i>with him</i>	con ellos	<i>with them</i>
con ella	<i>with her, with it</i>	con ellas	<i>with them</i>
con usted	<i>with you</i>	con ustedes	<i>with you</i>
con ello	<i>with it</i>		

In the first-and second-person singular, **mí** and **ti** become **conmigo** and **contigo**.

¿Por qué no vienes conmigo al concierto? Está bien. Iré contigo .	<i>Why don't you come with me to the concert? Okay. I'll go with you.</i>
--	---

In the third person (both singular and plural), **consigo** is typically used when the object of the preposition refers to the subject.

Él llevó los libros consigo . Ellos llevaron los libros consigo .	<i>He took the books with him. They took the books with them.</i>
--	---

Mi hermano vive en San Diego y mi padre vive con él . Mi hermano vive con ellos .	<i>My brother lives in San Diego, and my father lives with him. My brother lives with them.</i>
---	---

Use **con** plus the appropriate standard prepositional pronoun when the object of the preposition refers to someone other than the subject of the sentence.

Mi hermano vive en San Diego y mi padre vive con él . Mi hermano vive con ellos .	<i>My brother lives in San Diego, and my father lives with him. My brother lives with them.</i>
---	---

In the **nosotros** and **vosotros** forms, the subject pronoun and the prepositional pronoun are identical.

3.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate the following sentences. Use the indicators given to determine the appropriate Spanish form of you.

I'm with you [sing., informal]. _____

You [sing., formal] *are with me*. _____

She's with him. _____

He's with her. _____

I work with you [sing., informal] *now*. _____

They live with me. _____

Does she study with you [sing., informal] ? _____

Who lives with you [pl., formal] ? _____

Why don't you [sing., informal] *dance with him*?

i. *I want to speak with you* [sing., formal].

.. *He lives with us*. _____

!. *She always takes the keys (la llave) with her*.

!. *They* [m.] *never take the keys with them*.

!. *Martin is with me*. _____

i. *Why don't you* [sing., formal] *take the umbrella (el paraguas) with you*?

i. *Why don't they* [f.] *take the umbrella with them*?

Subject pronouns with prepositions

There are six prepositions that take a subject pronoun—even in the first-and second-person singular—instead of the standard prepositional pronouns.

entre	<i>between</i>	menos	<i>except</i>
excepto	<i>except</i>	salvo	<i>except</i>
incluso	<i>including</i>	según	<i>according to</i>

The prepositions **excepto**, **menos**, and **salvo**, all of which mean “except,” can, for the most part, be used interchangeably.

Juan está **entre** tú y yo.
Todos bailan **excepto** él. }
Todos bailan **menos** él. }
Todos bailan **salvo** él. }
Según él, debemos llegar pronto.
Todos vamos a la fiesta, **incluso** tú.

*Juan is **between** you and me.*
*Everyone dances, **except** him.*
***According to** him, we should be there soon.*
*We're all going to the party, **including** you.*

3.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate the following sentences into Spanish. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

There are twenty people here, including you and me.

According to her, money can buy happiness (la felicidad).

Between you, me, and the grand piano (el piano de cola), this painting is ghastly (espantoso).

I think (creer) that everybody (todo el mundo) speaks French here, except me.

Between us and them, we have enough (suficiente) money.

Everyone (todos) here is outraged (escandalizado), including me.

Everyone in the neighborhood (la vecindad) has a swimming pool (la piscina), except us.

We are in a lot of trouble (tener muchas dificultades), according to me.

Everybody is ready (listo), except you [sing., formal].

1. According to them, it is possible to live on Mars (Marte).

Reflexive pronouns following a preposition

When you do something for yourself, it is called a reflexive action, because the action is reflected back to the performer of the action. (For a more complete discussion of reflexive pronouns, see [Chapter 11](#), Reflexive object pronouns.) A reflexive action can be expressed either with a reflexive pronoun alone or with a preposition + pronoun. When a preposition is used—in the examples given below, we use the preposition **a** (“to”)—then the pronouns that follow the preposition are as shown below:

a mí mismo	<i>to myself</i>	a nosotros mismos	<i>to ourselves</i>
a mí misma	<i>to myself</i>	a nosotras mismas	<i>to ourselves</i>
a ti mismo	<i>to yourself</i>	a vosotros mismos	<i>to yourselves</i>
a ti misma	<i>to yourself</i>	a vosotras mismas	<i>to yourselves</i>
a sí mismo	<i>to himself, to yourself, to itself</i>	a sí mismos	<i>to themselves, to yourselves</i>
a sí misma	<i>to herself, to yourself, to itself</i>	a sí mismas	<i>to themselves, to yourselves</i>

Preparo el café **para mí mismo**.

*I prepare the coffee **for myself**.*

Marta, tú piensas solamente **en ti misma**.

*Marta, you think only **about yourself**.*

Los buenos maestros enseñan **a sí mismos** también.

*Good teachers teach **themselves** too.*

3.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate the following sentences into Spanish.

I buy the car for (para) myself.

He does everything for (para) himself.

They do everything by (por) themselves.

She hurts (perjudicar a) herself when she tells a lie (la mentira).

You [pl., informal] only (sólo) hurt yourselves.

I write notes (la nota) to myself in order to (para) remember (recordar) the things that I need to do.

You should have time for (para) yourself every day.

She always buys a gift for herself on her birthday.

When I travel, I send my purchases (la compra) to myself through the mail (por correo).

l. You [sing., formal] can't sell your house to yourself. It's ridiculous!

3.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following paragraph into Spanish.*

VOCABULARIO	acerca de	about
	ahora	now
	al lado de	next door to
	el árbol	tree
	creer	to believe, think
	delante de	in front of
	después	then
	entrar en	to enter into
	el mapache	raccoon
	el mundo	world
	el oso	bear
	salir de	to leave from
	si	if
	tener suerte	to be lucky
	usualmente	usually

Pedro is my friend. I am very happy, because he lives next door to me. A raccoon lives underneath my house. Between you [pl.] and me, I think that raccoons are interesting animals. I'm reading a book about them now. Usually the raccoon lives in a tree, but I am lucky because my house is on top of this raccoon. According to Pedro, the raccoon is part of the bear family, and he believes that if he sees the animal in front of him, it's "good-bye, world." When Pedro leaves (from) or enters (into) my house, he always looks to the left and then to the right.

4 Possessive pronouns

FUNCTION

To replace the nouns that name the owner of an object and the object itself

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Immediately after a conjugated verb (often **ser**)

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“mine,” “yours,” “his,” “hers,” “its,” “ours,” “theirs”

Possessive pronouns are not used as frequently in Spanish as they are in English. Because these pronouns stand for the object owned as well as the owner, they agree with the object owned in number and gender.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
mío, míos	<i>mine</i>	nuestro, nuestros	<i>ours</i>
mía, mías	<i>mine</i>	nuestra, nuestras	<i>ours</i>
tuyo, tuyos	<i>yours</i>	vuestro, vuestros	<i>yours</i>
tuya, tuyas	<i>yours</i>	vuestra, vuestras	<i>yours</i>
suyo, suyos	<i>his, hers, yours, its</i>	suyo, suyos	<i>theirs, yours</i>
suya, suyas	<i>his, hers, yours, its</i>	suya, suyas	<i>theirs, yours</i>

The possessive pronoun differs from the possessive adjective in significant ways. The adjective modifies and precedes the noun, as in the sentence **Es *mi* gato** (“It is *my* cat”), whereas the pronoun includes the significance of the noun and follows the conjugated verb, as in the sentence **Es *mío*** (“It is *mine*”). If the noun is plural, the possessive adjective is plural as well: **mi gato, mis gatos; tu televisor, tus televisores**. The following chart shows the possessive adjectives.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
mi, mis	<i>my</i>	nuestro, nuestros	<i>our</i>
		nuestra, nuestras	<i>our</i>
tu, tus	<i>your</i>	vuestro, vuestros	<i>your</i>
		vuestra, vuestras	<i>your</i>
su, sus	<i>his, her, your, its</i>	su, sus	<i>their, your</i>

Possessive pronouns following **ser**

The possessive pronoun frequently appears after the third-person conjugated forms of **ser**—**es** and **son**.

¿El chaleco? Es **mío**.
¿Las herramientas? **Son** **suyas**.

The vest? It's mine.
The tools? They are theirs.

4.1 EJERCICIO

Rewrite the following sentences, using the appropriate possessive pronouns in place of the expressions that have possessive adjectives. Remember that a possessive pronoun takes the gender and number of the object owned.

- | | |
|---|------------|
| 1. Es mi teléfono. | Es _____. |
| 2. Es tu hamburguesa. | Es _____. |
| 3. Es su refrigerador. | Es _____. |
| 4. Son mis anteojos. | Son _____. |
| 5. Son sus relojes. | Son _____. |
| 6. Es nuestra mesa. | Es _____. |
| 7. Son tus tazas. | Son _____. |
| 8. Son vuestros tenedores. | Son _____. |
| 9. Son sus sillas. | Son _____. |
| 10. Es vuestra lámpara. | Es _____. |
| 11. Son mis sábanas (<i>sheets</i>). | Son _____. |
| 12. Son tus fundas (<i>pillowcases</i>). | Son _____. |
| 13. Son nuestras colchas (<i>quilts</i>). | Son _____. |
| 14. Es su pintura. | Es _____. |
| 15. Son sus computadoras. | Son _____. |

4.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following pairs of sentences into Spanish, using possessive pronouns.*

The cat is mine. The cats are mine.

The snake (la culebra) is yours. The snakes are yours.

The bird (el pájaro) is hers. The birds are hers.

The monkey (el mono) is his. The monkeys are his.

The giraffe (la jirafa) is ours. The giraffes are ours.

The pig (el cerdo) is theirs. The pigs are theirs.

The spider (la araña) is mine. The spiders are mine.

The horse (el caballo) is yours. The horses are yours.

The butterfly (la mariposa) is hers. The butterflies are hers.

l. The elephant (el elefante) is ours. The elephants are ours.

Possessive pronouns expressing “of mine/yours/his/hers/ours/theirs”

When the possessive pronoun follows a noun in English, the word “of” is used before the possessive pronoun (“of mine,” “of yours,” “of his,” “of hers,” “of ours,” “of theirs”). In Spanish, there is no need to add **de** (“of”). Use of the possessive pronoun immediately after a noun adds emphasis to the owner of the object. (Use of the possessive adjective usually emphasizes the object owned.)

La amiga suya es bonita.

The friend of hers is pretty.

El coche suyo es un clásico.

The car of his is a classic.

Esos compañeros míos son muy listos.

Those classmates of mine are very clever.

4.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.*

A friend [m.] of mine works here.

A friend [f.] of mine lives here.

Some friends [m.] of mine have a cabin (la cabaña) in Canada.

A friend [f.] of his studies Spanish.

I work with a friend [f.] of yours.

A colleague (el colega) of ours speaks German (alemán) and Gaelic (gaélico).

They don't want to speak with him, because he is an enemy (el enemigo) of theirs.

A friend [m.] of yours is a friend of mine.

Those paintings (la pintura) of his are fascinating (encantador).

l. A cousin [f.] of ours is a princess (la princesa) in Europe (Europa).

Possessive pronouns in statements of comparison

In Spanish, when two or more things are compared (or contrasted), the name of the first item is mentioned, and the other items are typically referred to by pronouns. This is frequently seen in cases involving possession, as in the sentence “My house is red, but *yours* (your house) is white.” In these situations, you must use the appropriate definite article with the possessive pronoun.

Su casa es roja, pero **la suya** es blanca.

Mi automóvil es francés, pero **el suyo** es italiano.

Sus marcos son de plata, pero **los míos** son de oro.

Nuestra marca es barata; **la suya** es cara.

*His house is red, but **theirs** is white.*

*My automobile is French, but **theirs** is Italian.*

*Her frames are silver, but **mine** are gold.*

*Our brand is cheap; **theirs** is expensive.*

4.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

Their house is dirty (sucio), but ours is clean (limpio).

Her books are in the kitchen, and mine are in the dining room.

He keeps (guardar) his money in the bank, but I keep mine in the mattress (el colchón).

His cousins live in Hollywood, and hers live in Seattle.

Our dog is a collie (el perro pastor), and hers is a poodle (el perro de lana).

Her jewels (la joya) are fake (la imitación), but mine are real (auténtico).

They buy their food in the supermarket (el supermercado), but we grow (cultivar) ours.

His attorney (el abogado) works for a big firm (la firma). Ours has an office in a basement.

It's my life. It isn't yours.

I. You [pl., informal] have your problems (el problema), and I have mine.

Possessive pronouns with regular comparisons

Regular comparisons in Spanish use **más... que** ("more . . . than"), **menos... que** ("less . . . than"), or **tan... como** ("as . . . as").

Julia es más alta que Diego.

Julia is taller than Diego.

Diego es tan guapo como Antonio Banderas.

Diego is as handsome as Antonio Banderas.

When we compare two equally named people or things that are possessed or owned, the first one is mentioned and the second one is usually replaced by a possessive pronoun and the appropriate definite article.

Mi amigo es más alto que el tuyo.

My friend is taller than yours.

Mi amiga es más interesante que la vuestra.

My friend is more interesting than yours.

Su casa es menos elegante que la nuestra.

Their house is less elegant than ours.

Su gato no es tan peludo como el mío.

His cat isn't as furry as mine.

Mi café no está tan sabroso como el tuyo.

My coffee isn't as delicious as yours.

4.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción

Their house is bigger than mine.

My house isn't as big as theirs.

Her clothing is more expensive than mine.

Your [pl., informal] jewels (la joya) are more elegant than ours.

Her ferret (el hurón) isn't as friendly (amable) as ours.

His thermos (el termo) isn't as full (lleno) as mine.

María's report (el reportaje) is more interesting than his.

Juan's car is newer than yours [sing., formal].

Her envelopes (el sobre) are prettier than mine. I'm going to buy a box (la caja).

l. Their hammers (el martillo) aren't as heavy (pesado) as yours [sing., informal].

Possessive pronouns with irregular comparatives

There are four irregular adjectives of comparison:

mejor, mejores	better	mayor, mayores	older
peor, peores	worse	menor, menores	younger

The Spanish syntax for sentences with these irregular comparatives is identical to English syntax. Note that while these irregular comparatives do not take gender, they do agree in number with the subject of the sentence.

Mi tortuga es **mejor** que la tuya.
Su gorila es **mayor** que el tuyo.
Sus osos son **peores** que los nuestros.
Mis moscas son **menores** que las tuyas.

*My turtle is **better** than yours.
His gorilla is **older** than yours.
His bears are **worse** than ours.
My flies are **younger** than yours.*

4.6 EJERCICIO

Traducción

Your [sing., informal] car is better than mine.

Their chairs are better than ours.

My painting is worse than his.

Elena's furniture (los muebles) is worse than his.

Your [sing., formal] friend is older than mine.

My grandparents are older than yours [sing., informal].

Our son is younger than yours [pl., informal].

Our goldfish (la carpa dorada) are younger than theirs.

Julia's paella is better than mine.

Beethoven's music (la música) is better than hers.

4.7 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	el anillo	ring
	el candelabro	candelabra
	el cleptómano, la cleptómana	kleptomaniac
	la cosa	thing
	disgustado, disgustada	upset
	hasta	even
	las iniciales	initials
	la lavadora	washer
	la ley	law
	nada	nothing
	la pintura	painting
	el por ciento	percent
	por eso	therefore
	la posesión	possession
	el refrigerador	refrigerator
	el reloj de péndulo	grandfather clock
	la secadora	dryer
	todo	everything

I am very upset because Silvia has my ring. She says that it is hers, but I know that it is mine, because it has my initials. Silvia is a kleptomaniac. Nothing in her house is hers. Many things are mine. For example, all the paintings are mine, the grandfather clock is mine, the candelabra in the dining room is mine, the washer and dryer are mine, even the food in the refrigerator is mine. What can I do? The famous lawyer Perry Mason (of classic television) says that possession is ninety-nine percent of the law. Therefore, everything is hers.

5 Demonstrative pronouns

FUNCTION

To replace an understood noun and point out its location relative to the speaker

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Before the verb (when used as a subject) or immediately after the verb (when used as an object)

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“this (one),” “that (one),” “these (ones),” “those (ones)”

The pronouns in the following chart may look familiar to you, because they are identical to demonstrative adjectives, except that the demonstrative pronouns take an accent mark. Think of it like this: If you drop the noun, the demonstrative adjective picks up an accent mark and becomes a demonstrative pronoun.

The exception to this rule is the neuter forms: **esto**, **eso**, and **aquello**. These forms are discussed later.

	MASCULINE	FEMININE	NEUTER
<i>this (one)</i>	éste	ésta	esto
<i>these (ones)</i>	éstos	ésta	
<i>that (one)</i>	ése	ésa	eso
<i>those (ones)</i>	ésos	ésta	
<i>that over there</i>	aqué	aquélla	aquello
<i>those over there</i>	aqué	aquélla	

Demonstrative pronouns with gender

When the pronoun refers to and includes the significance of something in particular, the gender and number of that referent are reflected in the pronoun.

Este coche es mío, pero **ése** es suyo.

La mejor marca es **ésta**.

Estas ventanas están limpias, pero **ésta** todavía faltan por limpiar.

Aquellas mesas son de roble, **ésta** son de pino y **ésta** son de caoba.

*This car is mine, but **that one** is his.*

*The best brand is **this one**.*

*These windows are clean, but **those** still need to be cleaned.*

*Those tables over there are oak, **those** are pine, and **these** are mahogany.*

5.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción

This book is mine, but that one is his.

This house is pretty, but that (one) is prettier.

These shoes are mine, and those are his.

These chairs are hers, and those are mine.

That boy over there is my neighbor (el vecino) and this (boy) is my son.

These women are my neighbors, but those (women) over there are from some other (otro) city.

That car is John's, and that one over there is mine.

Those magazines are terrible, but these are much better.

This telephone works (funcionar), but that one (over there) never works.

These programs (el programa) are terrible, but those are even (aún) worse.

Neuter demonstrative pronouns

In Spanish, to refer to something nonspecific (“*That’s not true!*”) or when you don’t know or can’t express the name of the referent (“*What is this?*”), use the neuter demonstrative pronoun. In other words, if there is no direct referent (so that it cannot be stated), the neuter demonstrative pronoun must be used.

The neuter demonstrative pronouns follow:

esto *this* eso *that* aquello *that over there*

Demonstrative pronouns are generally used in exclamations, questions, and abstractions

ADDITIONS.

¡Esto es absurdo!

This is absurd!

¿Qué es eso?

What is that?

Aquello es una monstruosidad.

That (unspecified thing far away) is a monstrosity.

No tengo dinero, por eso no puedo ir.

I don't have any money, that is why I can't go.

5.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción

This is great! _____

What is this? _____

That is a crime (el crimen). _____

I never do that. _____

This is a sin (el pecado). _____

What is happening (pasar) with that (thing far away)?

That is why you [sing., informal] should vote. _____

This is why I shouldn't smoke. _____

Who says that? _____

l. *Who writes this?* _____

5.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO

a menudo

often

la actitud

attitude

la clase

class

desgraciadamente

unfortunately

estúpido

stupid

frustrado, frustrada

frustrated

la graduación

graduation

el profesor, la profesora

professor

la tarea

assignment

terminar

to end

el trabajo

job

la vida

life

"Who needs this? This is so stupid! I don't need this for my job." Some people say this when they are frustrated or when they have to take a class at (en) the

university that they don't want to take. It's this class or that one. It's this professor or that one. It's these books or those. It's these assignments or those. When does this end? Does this end after graduation? Unfortunately, no. This is often an attitude for life.

6 Numbers as pronouns

FUNCTION

To replace an understood or omitted noun, assuming the meaning of the noun itself as well as the number

Before the verb (when used as a subject) or after the verb (when used as an object)

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS
Cardinal numbers: “one,” “two,” “three,” *etc.* Ordinal numbers: “first,” “second,” “third,” *etc.*

Numbers function as pronouns when they stand for a noun that is understood or has been omitted as well as the number itself. Both cardinal and ordinal numbers serve this function.

CARDINAL NUMBERS	ORDINAL NUMBERS
uno, una	primero, primera
dos	segundo, segunda
tres	tercero, tercera
cuatro	cuarto, cuarta
cinco	quinto, quinta
seis	sexto, sexta
siete	séptimo, séptima
ocho	octavo, octava
nueve	noveno, novena
diez	décimo, décima

The cardinal numbers continue into infinity. However, after **décimo** (“tenth”), the ordinal forms offer two possibilities: Continue in the pattern with ordinal numbers— **onceavo** (“eleventh”), **doceavo** (“twelfth”), **treceavo** (“thirteenth”), *etc.*—or, more commonly, use the cardinal number either alone or placed after the noun.

Quiero el décimo .	}	<i>I want the tenth one.</i>
Quiero el doceavo .		<i>I want the twelfth one.</i>
Quiero el doce .		
Vivo en el onceavo piso.	}	<i>I live on the eleventh floor.</i>
Vivo en el piso once .		

Cardinal numbers as pronouns

When used as pronouns, cardinal numbers include the significance of the understood noun, for example, “How many children do you have? I have *three*.” In this case, “three” represents “three children.” Remember that when you use the number **uno** (“one”) as a pronoun, it changes to **una** when replacing a feminine noun.

¿Cuántos libros lees tú al año?

Leo **uno**.

¿Estas galletas son para la fiesta?

Pues, sólo comí **una**.

How many books do you read each year?

*I read **one**.*

These cookies are for the party?

*Well, I only ate **one**.*

6.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

How many cars do you have? I have one.

How many houses do you have? I have one.

How many cookies do you want? I want ten.

How many hamburgers do you [pl., formal] want? Jane wants two and I want one.

How many people are there in your family? There are three.

He has seven dogs, but I only have six.

He sees many stars (la estrella) in the sky (el cielo),but I see only one.

Maria knows (conocer) all these paintings (la pintura),but we know only one.

I only have one telephone, but one is better than nothing.

l. *How many cards (el naípe) do you want? I want one.*

Ordinal numbers as pronouns

When an ordinal number serves as an adjective, it precedes the noun and agrees with it in number and gender. The noun in these cases is always in its singular form: **el segundo libro, la segunda iglesia.**

If the noun is omitted, the ordinal number serves instead as a pronoun. The meaning of the noun is then understood, its gender is shown by the **-o** or **-a** ending, and the article is retained: **el segundo libro** becomes **el segundo.**

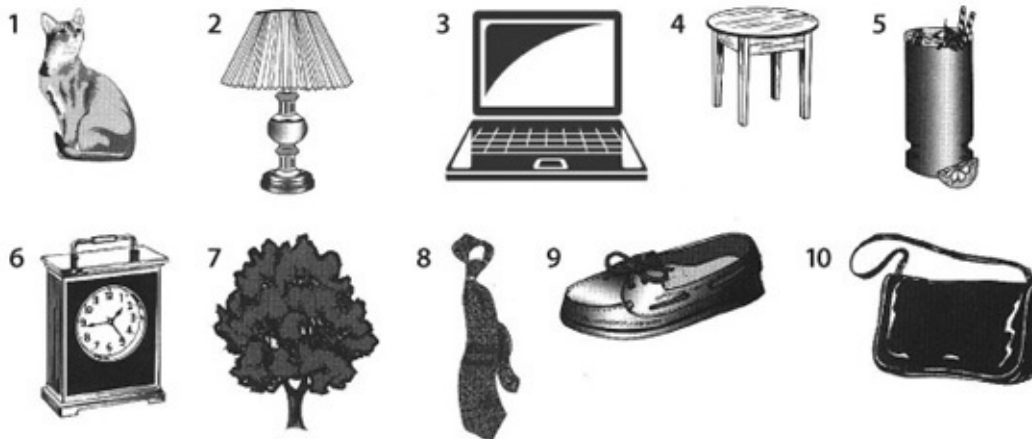
Tienes el primer libro y el tercer libro,
y yo tengo **el segundo.**
Febrero es el segundo mes y enero es
el primero.
Ella vive en la cuarta casa y él vive en
la quinta.

*You have the first book and the third book,
and I have **the second.**
February is the second month, and January
is **the first.**
She lives in the fourth house, and he lives
in **the fifth.***

Note that as adjectives, the ordinals **primero** and **tercero** drop the **-o** when preceding a masculine singular noun: **primer libro, tercer libro.** As a pronoun, the **-o** ending is retained: **el primero.**

6.2 EJERCICIO

Based on the numbered order of the pictures, complete each sentence with the appropriate ordinal pronoun. The first item has been done for you.



El árbol es el séptimo.

La lámpara es _____

El zapato es _____

El vaso es _____

La bolsa es _____

El gato es _____

La corbata es _____

La computadora es _____

El reloj es _____

l. La mesa es _____

6.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción

I live in the second house on the left (a la izquierda), and Miguel lives in the sixth.

Who lives in the eighth house? I don't know, but Marcos lives in the seventh.

My car is the third (one) on the right (a la derecha), and Ricardo's car is the fourth (one).

The Bible says that Adam (Adán) is the first person and that Eve (Eva) is the second.

The first movie (la película) is always better than (mejor que) the second.

The actor's third movie is better than the fourth.

His fifth book is more interesting than the sixth.

In Spain, the first day of the week is Monday, and the seventh is Sunday.

The eighth month is August, the ninth is September, and the tenth is October.

1. *The first puzzle (el enigma) is harder (más difícil) than the second.*

2. *Today is the first (day) of April.*

3. *The first time (la vez) is always better than the second, the third, and so on (y así sucesivamente).*

6.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	absurdo, absurda	<i>absurd</i>
	la cereza	<i>cherry</i>
	competir	<i>compete</i>
	la galleta	<i>cracker</i>
	el ganador, la ganadora	<i>winner</i>
	la hamburguesa	<i>hamburger</i>
	juntos, juntas	<i>together</i>
	para	<i>in order to</i>
	el/la participante	<i>contestant</i>
	el pastel	<i>pie</i>
	peor	<i>worse</i>
	por ejemplo	<i>for example</i>
	puro, pura	<i>pure</i>
	el reto	<i>challenge</i>
	sabroso, sabrosa	<i>delicious</i>
	la tortura	<i>torture</i>
	la uva	<i>grape</i>

Whenever we eat together, my friend and I compete (in order) to see who can eat more. For example, when we eat crackers, if I eat one, he eats two. Then I eat three, and he eats four. The first contestant with an empty plate is the winner. This is easy with crackers or grapes or cherries. But it is very difficult with hamburgers. The first is delicious. The second is, too. The third is not bad. The fourth is a challenge. The fifth is absurd—also the sixth, the seventh, and the eighth. The ninth is pure torture. And the tenth is impossible. It's worse with pies!

7 Adjective pronouns

FUNCTION

To assume the meaning of an understood, irrelevant, or omitted noun

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Before the verb (when used as a subject) or after the verb (when used as an object)

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

Expressions such as “the red one,” “somebody”

It is said that human beings are efficient by nature. That efficiency is found in virtually all uses of pronouns: A pronoun replaces an understood noun, and use of a pronoun for an understood noun lightens the load, so to speak.

I see Martin, Daisy, Lily, and Kitty.

*I see **them**.*

Qualitative adjective pronouns

In Spanish, this efficiency is seen when descriptive, or qualitative, adjectives become pronouns. In English, we generally add the word “one,” as in the sentence “He has the green apple, and I have the red one.” In Spanish, the adjective assumes the entire meaning of the noun: **Él tiene la manzana verde y yo tengo la roja.** The adjective retains the gender and number of the omitted noun, as well as the appropriate definite article (**el, la, los, or las**). In the sentence, it also represents the full meaning of the noun.

Él lee el libro grande, y yo leo
el pequeño.

A mí me gusta la mesa azul, pero
a ti te gusta **la roja.**

Tú llevas zapatos negros y yo llevo
los blancos.

Nosotros pintamos las casas enormes
y ellos pintan **las muy pequeñas.**

*He reads the big book, and I read
the small one.*

*I like the blue table, but you like
the red one.*

*You wear black shoes and I wear
white ones.*

*We paint the enormous houses, and
they paint **the very small ones.***

7.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

He buys new cars, but I always buy used ones.

She prefers tall men, but I prefer short ones.

They want the easy question, but we want the difficult one.

She thinks that the blond (rubio) man is handsome, but I prefer the brown-haired (moreno) one.

The blue fountain pen is yours, but the green one is mine.

Every client (el cliente) wants to buy a luxury (de lujo) car, but buys the compact one.

More people buy the gray carpet (la alfombra), because the white (one) is always dirty (sucio).

The two dresses are beautiful, but the long (largo) one is more elegant.

He puts the big lamps (la lámpara) in the living room and the small ones in the bedroom.

1. The big glass (la copa) is for the red wine, and the small one is for the white (wine).

Quantitative adjective pronouns

Adjectives that are quantitative tell us the number or amount of the noun to which they refer. When a number is placed before a noun (for example, “two cats”), that number functions as an adjective. When the noun is understood and dropped, the adjective takes on the status of a pronoun, because it includes the meaning of the noun. (For more about numbers used as pronouns, see [Chapter](#)

Yo tengo tres cajas y él tiene **cuatro**. *I have three boxes and he has **four** (boxes).*
 6.) Hay dos mesas allí, pero sólo **una** aquí. *There are two tables there, but only **one** (table) here.*

Note that the number **uno** (“one”) takes gender.

Many quantitative adjectives are not actual numbers themselves. Instead, they refer to an amount, with an indirect way of revealing number. Most of these words can function as adjectives: **algunos platos** (“some plates”), **todos los invitados** (“all the guests”). When they stand alone or are used to refer to a noun or other antecedent, they function as pronouns: **algunos** (“some of them”), **todos** (“all of them”). Below are several commonly used quantitative adjectives.

VOCABULARIO

algunos, algunas	some (of them), any (of them)
ambos, ambas	both (of them)
cada uno, cada una	each one
demasiado, demasiada	too much
demasiados, demasiadas	too many
la mayoría	the majority (of people)
los demás, las demás	the rest (of them)
los dos, las dos	both, the two (of them)
más	more (of it, of them)
menos	less, fewer
mucho, mucha	a lot (of something)
muchos, muchas	a lot (of things), many things
nada	nothing
ninguno, ninguna	none, neither one, not anything, not a single one
otro, otra	another, the other (one)
poco, poca	(a) little
primero, primera	first
todo, toda	everything, all
último, última	last
unos, unas	some
unos cuantos, unas cuantas	a few (of them)
varios, varias	several

A él le gusta el vestido rojo más que el verde, pero a mí me gustan ambos .	<i>He likes the red dress more than the green one, but I like both (of them).</i>
Jorge come todas las galletas en el paquete, pero Felipe come sólo unas cuantas .	<i>Jorge eats all the cookies in the package, but Felipe eats only a few (of them).</i>
Cada año intento ahorrar dinero, pero acabo por gastar demasiado .	<i>Every year I try to save money, but I end up spending too much (of it).</i>
Todos los miembros querían participar en el comité, pero ninguno quería trabajar duro.	<i>All the members wanted to be on the committee, but none wanted to work hard.</i>

7.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción

Some people live in the city, and some (of them) live in the country (el campo).

Seventy percent (el por ciento) of _____ the dentists use this toothbrush (el cepillo de dientes), and the rest (of them) use a stick (el palo).

I can't decide which is the better dishwasher (el lavaplatos). I like them both.

I never go shopping (ir de compras) with her. She buys everything. It's dangerous (peligroso).

Diego likes parties. He's always the last (one) to leave (en salir).

My husband drinks milk all the time. Therefore (por eso), I buy a lot (of it) every week.

I have several Spanish books. Do you want one?

Esmeralda loves (encantar) shoes. She has lots (of them).

In the meetings (la reunión), a few people talk all the time, and the majority (of them) suffer in silence.

1. Marcia receives all the presents, and poor little (pobrecita) Jan doesn't receive a single one.

2. We have lots of salad. Do you want more (of it)?

3. Usually, thousands (el mil) of people come to the ceremony, but this year there are obviously (obviamente) fewer.

4. The students are going on a field trip (de excursión). Each one has a backpack

(la mochila).

l. *Each girl (la chica) has a pencil, but several (of them) don't have paper.*

i. *I'm going to order (pedir) another milkshake (el batido). Do you want another (one), too?*

Adjective pronouns that refer to unspecified people

When a pronoun replaces a known person, a subject pronoun is often used. Instead of "John," we use "he"; for "John and Carlos," we use "they," and so on.

Frequently, however, we speak of people whose names we do not know, cannot know, or whose identity, considering the situation, is irrelevant. In these cases, use an appropriate pronoun. Below are several common adjective pronouns that refer to unspecified people.

alguien	someone, somebody
cualesquiera	any [pl.]
cualquiera	anyone, anybody, any one (person)
el mayor, la mayor	the oldest (one)
el menor, la menor	the youngest (one)
el que, la que	the one who, he who, she who
los que, las que	they who, those who, the ones who
nadie	no one, nobody
ninguno, ninguna	neither one
todos, todas	everyone, everybody

El mayor recibe todos los privilegios.	<i>The oldest (one) receives all the privileges.</i>
Santa Claus tiene regalos para todos.	<i>Santa Claus has gifts for everybody.</i>
El que cree esto, está loco.	<i>He who believes this is crazy.</i>
Nadie va de compras aquí.	<i>No one goes shopping here.</i>
Cualquiera de mis amigos puede hablar español.	<i>Any one of my friends can speak Spanish.</i>
Cualesquiera de ustedes harían lo mismo.	<i>Any of you would do the same thing.</i>

7.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción

Often (a menudo) the youngest [m.] wears used clothing.

Everybody thinks that this is brilliant.

Nobody is going to eat this. It's moldy (mohoso) !

Someone is in the kitchen with Dinah.

Our favorite customer (la cliente) is she who spends (gastar) all her money on cosmetics (los cosméticos) and clothing.

In the books of Harry Potter, Hermione is the oldest and Harry is the youngest of the three main characters (el personaje).

For these positions (el puesto), those who want to work ten hours a day (al día) can request (pedir) an interview (la entrevista).

Many psychologists (el psicólogo) study the differences between the oldest (child) and the youngest (child) in the family.

Oscar Wilde writes that a cynic (el cínico) is he who knows the price (el precio) of everything and the value (el valor) of nothing.

1. Everyone suffers from time to time (de vez en cuando), and the majority are stronger for (por) the experience.

.. Everybody is here, but some (of them) don't know anybody.

!. Juan and Mateo live together, but neither (one) has a television set (el televisor).

}. Anybody can wear these pants.

|. Ramón gives advice (dar consejos) to anyone.

i. *There is a party tonight. Any [pl.] of you can go with me.*

Adjective pronouns that refer to unspecified things

With things, as with people, when the name of the referent is either unknown or irrelevant, you need a nonspecific, gender-neutral pronoun.

Below are several common adjective pronouns that refer to unspecified things.

algo	something, anything
cualesquiera	any [pl.]
cualquiera	anything, any one (thing), whichever, whatever
lo mejor	the best (thing)
lo mismo	the same (thing)
lo peor	the worst (thing)
nada	nothing, not anything

Puedes tener cualquiera de estas galletas.	<i>You can have any one of these cookies.</i>
Cuando vamos de vacaciones, siempre hacemos lo mismo .	<i>When we go on vacation, we always do the same thing.</i>
Lo mejor en la vida es gratis.	<i>The best in life is free. (The best (things in life) are free.)</i>
Tengo algo para ti.	<i>I have something for you.</i>

7.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

Do you have anything for (para) me?

Of all the things in the world, the best is love.

It doesn't matter (no importa) if I wear blue jeans (los blue-jeans). She always wears the same (thing).

Which one do they want? Whatever. It doesn't matter.

It's wonderful when you [pl., formal] dance. The best is when you dance the

mambo.

The service (el servicio) and the ambience (el ambiente) here are terrible. But the worst is the food.

He never brings anything to a party, but he always eats and drinks everything.

The worst (thing) in a relationship (la relación) is not to be able to trust (tener confianza en) the other person.

Some people think that he's very wise (sabio), but the truth is that he always says the same thing.

I don't know anything about (acerca de) this.

Any one of these cars is good for (para) the winter.

These books are interesting. You can read any one of them.

Any one of these three is okay.

Any [pl.] of these are okay.

7.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	el anuncio	ad
	la contraportada	back
	entregar	to deliver
	el letrero	sign
	la mentira	lie
	la persona no honrada	huckster
	prometer	to promise
	el resto de	the rest of
	suponer	to suppose
	la verdad	true (lit., truth)
	la vida	life

This sign says, "Today is the first day of the rest of your life." If this is true, then what is tomorrow? The second? I can't believe everything that I read. No one can. Some (people) believe everything. Some people believe the ads in the backs of magazines. I suppose that some of these are true, but the majority of these ads are lies. Who are these hucksters? They promise everything and deliver nothing.

8 Relative pronouns

FUNCTION

To represent understood or omitted material, thereby allowing the combination of two or more clauses

SPANISH PLACEMENT

As a separator between the independent (principal) clause and the dependent clause of a sentence

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“who,” “whom,” “which,” “whichever,” “what,” “whatever,” “that,” “whose”

A relative pronoun refers to something that has been previously stated or is understood, and thus the pronoun is related to that referent. For that reason, these pronouns are called relative pronouns.

cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas	whose
el cual, la cual	the one who, the one that
el que, la que	the one who, the one that
lo que	that which, what, whatever
los cuales, las cuales	those who, those that
los que, las que	those who, those that
que	that, who, which
PREPOSICIÓN + que	PREPOSITION + that, PREPOSITION + which
PREPOSICIÓN + quien(es)	PREPOSITION + whom

Restrictive vs. nonrestrictive clauses

Before we move forward, it is necessary to understand the concepts of restrictive and nonrestrictive clauses. A grasp of these concepts will facilitate your work with relative pronouns in this chapter.

Restrictive clause

A restrictive clause contains information that is essential to the meaning of the sentence. In other words, it restricts the meaning of the word or words to which it refers. If this clause were removed, the sentence would change meaning or it would become meaningless or ridiculous.

*A lamp **that doesn't have a bulb** is useless.*

In this sentence, the dependent clause “that doesn't have a bulb” is restrictive,

because it is necessary to the overall meaning of the sentence. If we remove this clause, we are left with the independent clause “A lamp is useless,” which is a grammatically correct sentence, but the essential meaning has changed dramatically, and what remains is absurd.

Nonrestrictive clause

A nonrestrictive clause contains information that is usually helpful to the overall meaning of the sentence, but it is not essential. If a nonrestrictive clause were removed, the sentence would stand on its own.

*Cats, **which** sometimes live fifteen years or longer, make nice pets.*

The dependent clause, “which sometimes live fifteen years or longer,” although informative, does not change the basic meaning of the sentence. The independent clause, “Cats make nice pets,” can easily stand alone as a grammatically correct sentence that retains its original meaning. The dependent clause is not essential for us to understand the sentence, and it could be left out. Because the information contained in a nonrestrictive clause is not necessary to the overall meaning of the sentence, the nonrestrictive clause is usually set off from the main sentence by commas.

Use of que

The relative pronouns “that,” “who,” and “which” in English all translate as **que** in Spanish. Whereas English relative pronouns distinguish between living (“who”) and nonliving (“that,” “which”) referents, there is no such distinction in Spanish in this context.

el caballo **que** gana la carrera
los estudiantes **que** leen el capítulo
el lago, **que** está contaminado,

*the horse **that** wins the race
the students **who** read the chapter
the lake, **which** is polluted,*

Note that the relative pronoun **que** sets up both restrictive and nonrestrictive clauses.

In English, the relative pronoun is sometimes omitted, so that both of the following are correct: “I have the towels you need” and “I have the towels *that* you need.” In Spanish, however, the relative pronoun cannot be omitted: You must include the Spanish word **que**.

Tengo las toallas **que** necesitas.
Compramos la comida **que** pides.
Él es el hombre **que** escribe esto.
Ellos venden casas **que** cuestan mucho.

*I have the towels you need.
We buy the food you request.
He is the man **who** writes this.
They sell houses **that** cost a lot.*

8.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.
I have the book that you want.

The people who work here are very nice (amable).

The car that I want is red.

I only watch movies that are from Europe.

He believes that this sauce (la salsa) is very hot (picante).

The medicine that I take every morning tastes like (saber a) gasoline.

You have two books that are good and two that are bad.

The painting (la pintura) that you see is by Francisco Goya.

He doesn't know that I have his wallet (la billetera).

1. *Do you know that butter is pure fat (pura grasa) ?*

2. *The man who lives in this house is an actor.*

3. *She always rents (alquilar) the movies that I recommend (recomendar).*

4. *She is the old woman (la vieja) who lives in a shoe.*

l. *The cats that have many toes (dedos) live in Key West, Florida.*

i. *The people who vote have a lot of power (el poder).*

Use of el cual or el que

When the relative pronouns “that,” “which,” “who,” or “whom” introduce a nonrestrictive clause (where the information is not essential to the overall meaning of the sentence), you can use **el cual (la cual, los cuales, las cuales)** or **el que (la que, los que, las que)** instead of the simple **que**.

El cual and **el que** are interchangeable. They lend a relatively formal tone to sentences, and therefore they are used primarily in writing or in formal speech. The relative pronoun **que** is used more frequently in conversation. Using the forms **el cual** and **el que** also adds greater emphasis to the nonrestrictive clauses they introduce.

Este sofá, **el cual** es disponible en veinte colores, es muy popular este año.

Tu sobrina, **la que** recibe buenas notas, quiere ser maestra.

Estos huevos, **los cuales** tienen casi un año, están muy sabrosos.

Estas langostas, **las que** son de Maryland, están muy frescas.

*This sofa, **which** is available in twenty colors, is very popular this year.*

*Your niece, **the one who** gets good grades, wants to be a teacher.*

*These eggs, **which** are almost a year old, are very tasty.*

*These lobsters, **which** are from Maryland, are very fresh.*

8.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción

His wife, who is lovely, speaks four languages (el idioma).

Their dog, which is a poodle (el perro de lana), barks (ladrar) all the time.

Our house, which is one hundred years old, is known (conocido) for the ghosts (el fantasma) that live in the attic (el desván).

My rings (el anillo), which are silver (de plata), are from Taxco, Mexico.

Our books, which are still (todavía) in boxes, are very valuable (valioso).

The landlord (el casero), who also lives in this building (el edificio), is a very strange (extraño) man.

My neighbor's (el vecino) children, who are noisier (más ruidoso) than an airport (el aeropuerto), are little angels (el angelito) in church.

The poet [f.], who is the mother of two daughters, writes every day (todos los días) at midnight.

The White House, which is popular with tourists, is the home (el hogar) of the president of the United States.

!). These wines, which are from France, are ninety years old.

.. The paragraph, which I have just (acabar de) read, makes no sense (tener sentido).

!.. This attitude (la actitud) of apathy (la indiferencia), which I cannot tolerate, is contagious (contagioso).

Use of preposition + quien or preposition + que

When the relative pronoun is the object of a preposition, usage follows the pattern preposition + **quien** when the referent is a person and preposition + **que** when the referent is inanimate. The resulting clause is a restrictive clause (that is, its information is essential to the meaning of the sentence).

The English grammar rule stating that a sentence does not end with a preposition is gradually becoming obsolete. In Spanish, however, this rule continues to be honored consistently. The English examples below reflect contemporary usage, with the preposition appearing at the end of the sentences. A sentence giving the Spanish syntax follows in parentheses. Note that in Spanish, in all cases, the preposition appears before the verb in the second clause, not at the end of the sentence.

clause, not at the end of the sentence.

Él es el hombre con quien trabajo.	He is the man I work with . (He is the man with whom I work.)
Éste es el libro en que pienso.	This is the book that I'm thinking about . (This is the book about which I'm thinking.)
Juana es la mujer a quien envío la comida.	Juana is the woman I'm sending the food to . (Juana is the woman to whom I'm sending the food.)
Paco Ortiz es el hombre por quien voy a votar.	Paco Ortiz is the man I'm going to vote for . (Paco Ortiz is the man for whom I'm going to vote.)

Note, however, that the Spanish word **a** is not always a preposition when it appears before Spanish **quien**. In the sentences below, it is the personal **a**, not the preposition **a** (“to”), that precedes the pronouns **quien** and **quienes**.

Antonio es el hombre a quien amo.	Antonio is the man I love. (Antonio is the man whom I love.)
Iris y Carmen son las chicas a quienes conozco.	Iris and Carmen are the girls I know. (Iris and Carmen are the girls whom I know.)

8.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you. The Spanish syntax is given in parentheses after the sentence to be translated.

Kitty is the woman I live with. (Kitty is the woman with whom I live.)

Who is the man you live with? (Who is the man with whom you live?)

These are the people he works for (para). (These are the people for whom he works.)

The man on the left is the person I date (salir con). (The man on the left is the person with whom I go out [date].)

Margo is the woman I work for. (Margo is the woman for whom I work.)

Francisco is the man I'm thinking about (pensar en). (Francisco is the man about whom I'm thinking.)

Raúl is the boy (el chico) I'm angry with (estar enojado/enojada con). (Raúl is the boy with whom I'm angry.)

Bárbara is the person I sympathize with (tener compasión por). (Bárbara is the person with whom I sympathize.)

Ana is the woman I see.

I. Those men are the players I watch.

Use of lo que

Lo que, meaning “that which,” “what,” or “whatever,” is a neuter relative pronoun that allows you to refer to a great abstraction, as in the sentence “You can have *whatever* you want.” **Lo que** can also encompass the entirety of something that is said or done, as in the sentence “*What* you are doing is a sin.”

Note that when **lo que** is used to mean “whatever,” it often stands for something that is unknown or doubtful. In these cases, it is followed by a verb in the subjunctive: **Haz lo que puedas** (“Do *whatever* you can”).

Lo que dices es interesante.
Él siempre hace **lo que** quiera.

What you're saying is interesting.
He always does **whatever** he wants. OR
He always does **whatever** he may want.
Do you have **what** I need?
What you want doesn't exist.

¿Tienen **lo que** necesito?
Lo que quieres no existe.

8.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción In each sentence, the word in **bold italic** translates as Spanish **lo que**. Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

*He never remembers (recordar) **what** I want.*

*She always eats **what** I eat.*

*On your birthday, you can ask for (pedir) **whatever** you (may) want.*

Whatever he says is always a lie (la mentira).

Do you hear**what** I hear? Do you know **what** I know?

He doesn't understand (comprender) **what** he reads.

Some people always do**what** they shouldn't do.

Do you know**what** you want to do this weekend?

She eats exactly **what** is bad for (para) her.

l. **What** you need is a hug (el abrazo).

Use of cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas

The relative pronoun **cuyo**, meaning “whose,” links the owner and the object owned. In the sentence “Peter, whose thesis is brilliant, is a fascinating man,” the owner is “Peter” and “thesis” is the object owned. The word “whose” begins the dependent clause and modifies the object owned. In Spanish, the relative pronoun in this dependent clause (**cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas**) must agree with the noun that immediately follows it—the object owned.

The relative pronouns **cuyo, cuya, cuyos**, and **cuyas** usually introduce a nonrestrictive clause, which is separated by commas from the main clause of the sentence.

Pedro, **cuya tesis** es brillante, es un hombre fascinante.

Jean, **cuyo padre** es de París, habla francés.

George, **cuyos abuelos** son músicos profesionales, toca bien el piano.

Laura, **cuyas alfombras** tienen manchas, está muy enojada.

Pedro, **whose thesis** is brilliant, is a fascinating man.

Jean, **whose father** is from Paris, speaks French.

George, **whose grandparents** are professional musicians, plays the piano well.

Laura, **whose rugs** have stains, is very angry.

8.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish

form for English you.

Marcos, whose mother is a dentist, wants to sell candy (los dulces).

The boy (el chico), whose book you have, is my cousin.

The actor, whose movies are terrible, is very rich.

The dentist, whose office (el consultorio) is in the city, lives in the suburbs (las afueras).

The children, whose parents speak only English, study Spanish.

He is the man whose dog always steals (robar) our newspaper.

Are you [sing., formal] the woman whose tree is so (tan) beautiful?

Are they the children whose father is the senator (el senador) from Colorado?

The student, whose teacher [f.] is from Ecuador, wants to go to Quito this summer.

!). Old Mrs. Hubbard, whose cupboards (el gabinete) are bare (vacío), wants to give her dog a bone (el hueso).

.. Mark, whose father is president of a bank, cannot add (sumar).

!. Lilia, whose store is very popular, is my best friend.

8.6 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with one of the following relative pronouns: **que, lo que, la que, los que, las que, cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas**, PREPOSITION + **que**, or

PREPOSITION + **quien(es)**.

El libro _____ yo tengo es muy interesante.

Tú no tienes _____ necesitamos.

Las personas _____ viven en casas de cristal no deben tirar piedras.

Pedro, _____ coche está descompuesto, tiene que tomar el autobús.

Él es el hombre _____ yo estimo mucho.

Ellas son las compañeras _____ trabajo.

La mujer, _____ cara puedes ver en esta foto, es una espía internacional.

¡ _____ él dice es basura! ¡No sabe nada!

Casi todo el mundo cree _____ es necesario tener electricidad en la casa.

1. Mi canción favorita de Navidad se llama “¿Oyes _____ yo oigo?”

2. En Noche Vieja (*New Year's Eve*), siempre hacemos _____ nos da la gana.

3. Hay muchas personas _____ hablan más de un idioma.

4. Mateo es el hombre _____ yo conozco bien.

5. Creo que tengo exactamente _____ ellos desean.

6. Este hombre, _____ corazón está roto, es un hombre trágico.

8.7 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	algo	somewhat
	alquilar	to rent
	el área [f.]	area
	el bar	bar
	el barco	boat
	el calor	warmth
	el centro	downtown
	el club	health club
	cualquier	any
	el desierto	desert
	la diversión	fun
	el guía	guide
	ir de pesca	to fish
	lo que quiera	whatever you want
	el lugar	place
	para la pesca	for fishing
	la piscina	swimming pool
	principalmente	mostly
	la punta	tip
	el resorte	resort
	la soledad	privacy
	sureño, sureña	southern
	la tienda	shop
	tranquilo, tranquila	tranquil
	las vacaciones	vacation

Cabo San Lucas, which is on the southern tip of Baja California, is a wonderful place for a tranquil vacation. The area, which is mostly in the desert, has many elegant resorts that have swimming pools, restaurants, bars, shops, and health clubs. For the most part (En su mayor parte), you [sing., formal] can do whatever you want in the privacy of your hotel room. There is a downtown, which is somewhat small, that has a marina, which has many boats for fishing. Tourists who want to fish can rent a boat with a guide. Any person whose idea of fun is warmth and sun can be very content for a week in Cabo San Lucas.

9 Direct object pronouns

FUNCTION

To replace a noun that names the direct object of the verb in a sentence or clause

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Immediately before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“me,” “you,” “him,” “her,” “it,” “us,” “them”

The direct object answers the question “What?” or “Whom?” with regard to the verb in a sentence or clause. Consider the sentence, “John has the book.” One can ask, “*What* does John have?” “John has *the book*”; thus, “the book” is the direct object. The direct object pronoun “it” can therefore replace the direct object noun in the sentence: “John has *it*.”

In the sentence, “John sees Mary,” one can ask, “*Whom* does John see?” “John sees *Mary*”; thus, “Mary” is the direct object. The direct object pronoun “her” can replace “Mary” in the sentence: “John sees *her*.”

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
me	<i>me</i>	nos	<i>us</i>
te	<i>you</i>	os	<i>you</i>
lo	<i>him, you, it</i>	los	<i>them, you</i>
la	<i>her, you, it</i>	las	<i>them, you</i>

Pronoun placement in affirmative sentences

In an affirmative statement or clause with one verb, the direct object pronoun immediately precedes the conjugated verb.

Yo **te** conozco.

*I know **you**.*

Lo vemos.

*We see **him**. OR We see **it**.*

Tú **me** amas.

*You love **me**.*

La tenéis.

*You have **it**.*

Ella **los** compra.

*She buys **them**.*

Ustedes **lo** quieren.

*You want **it**.*

9.1 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the correct direct object pronoun.

- | | |
|---|--------------------------------|
| 1. Juan tiene el libro. | Juan _____ tiene. |
| 2. Ellos ven a María. | Ellos _____ ven. |
| 3. Yo conozco a Jorge y a Felipe. | Yo _____ conozco. |
| 4. Juanita conoce España. | Juanita _____ conoce. |
| 5. Tú lavas la ropa. | Tú _____ lavas. |
| 6. Tú compras los huevos. | Tú _____ compras. |
| 7. Ustedes beben la leche. | Ustedes _____ beben. |
| 8. Yo no veo los libros. | Yo no _____ veo. |
| 9. Ellas tienen el dinero. | Ellas _____ tienen. |
| 10. Vosotros comprendéis el ejercicio. | Vosotros _____ comprendéis. |
| 11. Marta lleva el vestido a la fiesta. | Marta _____ lleva a la fiesta. |
| 12. Yo uso la computadora cada día. | Yo _____ uso cada día. |
| 13. Alejandro vende los zapatos. | Alejandro _____ vende. |
| 14. Ella toma las vitaminas. | Ella _____ toma. |
| 15. Nosotros miramos la televisión. | Nosotros _____ miramos. |

9.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción

- I love you.* _____
- I love him.* _____
- He loves me.* _____
- I see you [sing., informal].* _____
- I know you [sing., formal].* _____
- She sees him.* _____
- I drink it [m.].* _____
- I have it [f.].* _____
- You [sing., informal] have it [m.].* _____
- b. *She has them [m.].* _____
- c. *You love me.* _____
- d. *I love her.* _____
- e. *They love us.* _____

- 4. You [sing., informal] *see me*. _____
- 5. You [pl., informal] *know me*. _____
- 6. We *see her*. _____
- 7. They *eat it* [f.]. _____
- 8. I *want it* [m.]. _____
- 9. We *want it* [f.]. _____
- 10. We *have them* [f.]. _____

9.3 EJERCICIO

Respond to each of the following questions with a complete sentence, using a direct object pronoun. Respond to items 4 through 14 in the affirmative.

- ¿Dónde compras la ropa? _____
- ¿Dónde compras los libros? _____
- ¿Dónde estudias español? _____
- ¿Conoces al presidente de los Estados Unidos? _____
- ¿Tomas un café cada día? _____
- ¿Comprendes esta lección? _____
- ¿Lees la revista *Teenbeat*? _____
- ¿Lees el periódico cada día? _____
- ¿Haces la cama cada día? _____
- 11. ¿Conoces la capital de España? _____
- 12. ¿Ves las estrellas ahora? _____
- 13. ¿Comes mucho pan? _____
- 14. ¿Miras las telenovelas (*soap operas*)? _____
- 15. ¿Lees poemas románticos a menudo? _____

Pronoun placement in negative sentences

In a negative sentence or clause with one verb, the direct object pronoun is placed between the word “no” (or other term of negation) and the conjugated verb.

Yo no lo sé.	<i>I don't know it.</i>
No lo conocemos.	<i>We don't know him.</i>
No los compras.	<i>You don't buy them.</i>
Nunca lo estudiáis.	<i>You never study it.</i>
Él no nos ve jamás.	<i>He never sees us.</i>
Ellos no me odian.	<i>They don't hate me.</i>

9.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

I don't have it [m.]. _____

She doesn't see it [f.]. _____

I don't know him. _____

You don't know me. _____

They don't buy it [f.]. _____

He doesn't write it [m.]. _____

They don't read them [m.]. _____

She doesn't earn it [m.]. _____

I don't wear it [m.]. _____

1. We don't see you. _____

2. You don't have it [f.]. _____

3. They don't see it [m.]. _____

4. He doesn't know me. _____

5. They don't know us. _____

6. We don't use it [m.]. _____

7. She doesn't read it [m.]. _____

8. We don't sing them [f.]. _____

9. You [pl., formal] don't have it [m.]. _____

10. You never wear them [m.]. _____

11. You never see us. _____

Pronoun placement in affirmative sentences with two verbs

In a statement or clause that contains two verbs, the first verb is conjugated and the second one remains in the infinitive form. There are two options for placement of the direct object pronoun in Spanish.

Place the direct object pronoun immediately before the first verb, which is conjugated.

Attach the direct object pronoun directly to the second verb, which is the infinitive form of the verb.

Note that both options are used in writing and in conversation; however, the second option is used more frequently.

Te quiero ver .	}	
Quiero verte .	}	<i>I want to see you.</i>
Lo queremos comprar .	}	
Queremos comprarlo .	}	<i>We want to buy it.</i>
Lo puedes beber .	}	
Puedes beberlo .	}	<i>You can drink it.</i>
La podéis comer .	}	
Podéis comerla .	}	<i>You can eat it.</i>
Él nos debe visitar .	}	
Él debe visitarnos .	}	<i>He should visit us.</i>
Ellos lo deben ver .	}	
Ellos deben verlo .	}	<i>They should see it.</i>

9.5 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the correct direct object pronoun attached to the infinitive.

- | | |
|---|---------------------------------|
| 1. Yo necesito lavar la ropa. | Yo necesito _____. |
| 2. Tú quieres comer la pizza. | Tú quieres _____. |
| 3. Ella tiene que escribir el informe. | Ella tiene que _____. |
| 4. Debemos limpiar la casa. | Debemos _____. |
| 5. El pianista puede tocar las canciones. | El pianista puede _____. |
| 6. Ellos pueden bailar el tango. | Ellos pueden _____. |
| 7. Quiero construir los edificios aquí. | Quiero _____ aquí. |
| 8. El gato puede ver el ratón (<i>mouse</i>). | El gato puede _____. |
| 9. Ella quiere conocer a tu madre. | Ella quiere _____. |
| 10. Prefiero oír la verdad. | Prefiero _____. |
| 11. El profesor quiere ver a tu padre ahora. | El profesor quiere _____ ahora. |
| 12. La cocinera va a preparar las tortillas. | La cocinera va a _____. |
| 13. Nadie puede oír la música ahora. | Nadie puede _____ ahora. |
| 14. Ellos quieren conocer a mis hermanos. | Ellos quieren _____. |
| 15. Queremos visitar el museo. | Queremos _____. |

9.6 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate each sentence into Spanish, making changes for the direct objects as follows: For items 1 through 5, place the direct object pronoun before the conjugated verb; for items 6 through 10, attach the direct object pronoun to the infinitive.*

He wants to see me. _____

She wants to kiss him. _____

You [sing., informal] should eat them [m.]. _____

They have to do it [f.]. _____

We want to meet them [f.]. _____

She has to sing it [f.]. _____

I should read it [m.]. _____

I want to see you [sing., informal] tomorrow. _____

They need to have it [m.] by (para) tomorrow. _____

Juan can see us. _____

Pronoun placement in questions and negative sentences with two verbs

For both questions and negative statements that have two verbs, the direct object

For both questions and negative statements that have two verbs, the direct object pronoun can be placed before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive, just as in affirmative sentences with two verbs.

No lo tengo que leer.	}	<i>I don't have to read it.</i>
No tengo que leerlo.		
No lo queremos hacer.	}	<i>We don't want to do it.</i>
No queremos hacerlo.		
¿Lo tienes que estudiar conmigo?	}	<i>Do you have to study it with me?</i>
¿Tienes que estudiarlo conmigo?		
¿Lo podéis soportar?	}	<i>Can you stand it?</i>
¿Podéis soportarlo?		
¿Piensan en venderlo?		<i>Are you thinking of selling it?</i>
Usted no debe ponerlo aquí.		<i>You shouldn't put it here.</i>

EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate each sentence into Spanish, attaching the direct object pronoun to the infinitive form. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

Do you want to see it [f.] with me?

Are you going to eat it [m.] ?

Should we drink it [f.] now, or should we put it in the refrigerator?

Can we eat it [m.], or should we throw it into (a) the garbage?

You shouldn't put them [m.] in the living room.

If you don't want to have it [f.], you should put it in the box and return (devolver) it.

I can't wear them [m.] to a formal party.

Why can't you see me?

You don't have to do it [m.] today.

l. Do you want to open them [f.] in the morning and close them in the evening?

EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate each sentence into Spanish, placing the direct object pronoun before the conjugated verb. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.*

I don't want to see you [m., pl., formal] tonight.

You shouldn't return (devolver) it [f.].

Why can't you say it [m.] ?

We are not going to see her at (en) the library.

She can't throw them [f.] in (a) the garbage.

When can I see them [f.] ?

If you don't want to hear it [m.], you can turn off (apagar) the radio.

Where do you want to store (guardar) them [m.] ? Can we put them here?

Are you [pl., formal] going to sell it [f.] ?

l. No, you cannot hit (golpear) him!

9.9 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	ahora	now
	el comedor	dining room
	creer	to believe, think
	la gaveta	drawer
	primero	first
	saltar	to jump
	segundo	second
	tercero	third
	la verdad	true (lit., truth)

I know that Marcos has my money, my shoes, and the table and chairs for my dining room. He thinks that I don't know this, but, yes, I know it. First, the money. I know that he has it because I can see it in that drawer (over there). Second, the shoes. I need them, because if I don't wear them, I can't run fast or (ni) jump well. Third, the table. I don't know why (por qué) he has it or (ni) why he wants it. I want to put it in my new house. He believes that the chairs are his, but it's not true. They are mine. And I want them now.

10 Indirect object pronouns

FUNCTION

To replace a noun that names the indirect object of the verb in a sentence or clause

SPANISH PLACEMENT
Immediately before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS
“me,” “you,” “him,” “her,” “us,” “them”

The indirect object answers the questions “To whom?” and “For whom?” with regard to the verb in a sentence or clause. In other words, the indirect object tells where the direct object is going.

Consider the sentence, “I give you the gift” (or “I give the gift *to* you”). The direct object is “the gift,” because this answers the question “*What* do I give?” The indirect object, then, is “you” because I am giving the gift *to* “you.” “You” is where the gift is going.

In the sentence “He buys me flowers” (or “He buys flowers *for* me”), the direct object is “flowers” (because that is *what* he buys), and the indirect object is “me” (because I am the one *for whom* he buys the flowers.) Indirect object pronouns in Spanish are as follows:

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
me	<i>me</i>	nos	<i>us</i>
te	<i>you</i>	os	<i>you</i>
le	<i>him, her, you</i>	les	<i>them, you</i>

In a sentence with an indirect object, there is always a direct object, either stated or implied. In the sentence “My grandmother writes me every week,” “me” is the indirect object, because my grandmother is writing *something* (a note, a letter, a postcard, an e-mail message) *to me*. The direct object is understood.

10.1 EJERCICIO

In the following sentences, identify the direct and indirect objects and write each object on the appropriate line, including those cases where the direct object is understood.

	DIRECT OBJECT	INDIRECT OBJECT
1. <i>John tells me a story.</i>	_____	_____
2. <i>She buys him nothing.</i>	_____	_____
3. <i>They send us food.</i>	_____	_____
4. <i>The chef cooks us a meal.</i>	_____	_____
5. <i>The cannibal cooks us for his friends.</i>	_____	_____
6. <i>He tells you.</i>	_____	_____
7. <i>I bought you a ring.</i>	_____	_____
8. <i>He buys drinks for everyone.</i>	_____	_____
9. <i>You write me every week.</i>	_____	_____
10. <i>They sold the diamonds to her.</i>	_____	_____

Pronoun placement in affirmative sentences

In Spanish, in an affirmative statement or clause with one verb, the indirect object pronoun immediately precedes the conjugated verb.

In English, however, there are two possibilities for placement of the indirect object pronoun in sentences with one verb: (1) between the verb and the direct object, or (2) in a prepositional phrase following the direct object.

Juan me compra un libro.	{ <i>John buys me a book.</i> <i>John buys a book for me.</i>
Ella nos dijo una mentira.	{ <i>She told us a lie.</i> <i>She told a lie to us.</i>
Yo te digo la verdad siempre.	{ <i>I always tell you the truth.</i> <i>I always tell the truth to you.</i>
Os damos el dinero.	{ <i>We give you the money.</i> <i>We give the money to you.</i>
Ella le escribe una carta.	{ <i>She writes him a letter.</i> <i>She writes a letter to him.</i>
Él les canta una canción.	{ <i>He sings them a song.</i> <i>He sings a song to them.</i>

10.2 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the appropriate indirect object pronoun.

- | | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| 1. Jorge compra flores para mí. | Jorge _____ compra flores. |
| 2. Marta cuenta la historia a nosotros. | Marta _____ cuenta la historia. |
| 3. Los padres leen el libro al niño. | Los padres _____ leen el libro. |
| 4. Escribo una carta a mis abuelos. | _____ escribo una carta. |
| 5. Felipe da un anillo a Juana. | Felipe _____ da un anillo. |
| 6. Vendemos la casa a Marta. | _____ vendemos la casa. |
| 7. Traigo el maquillaje (<i>makeup</i>) a Mary Kay. | _____ traigo el maquillaje. |
| 8. Preparamos la cena para Guillermo. | _____ preparamos la cena. |
| 9. Compras la falda para mí. | _____ compras la falda. |
| 10. Martín planta un árbol para nosotros. | Martín _____ planta un árbol. |
| 11. Ella escribe una carta a ustedes. | Ella _____ escribe una carta. |
| 12. Enviamos el regalo a vosotros. | _____ enviamos el regalo. |
| 13. Sirvo la comida a ellas. | _____ sirvo la comida. |
| 14. El arquitecto diseña una casa para ti. | El arquitecto _____ diseña una casa. |
| 15. El mesero sirve la bebida a Isabel. | El mesero _____ sirve la bebida. |

10.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción

I tell him the truth.

He tells lies to me all the time.

We give her the flowers.

I write them a letter every week.

They write to us every month.

She sings him a song.

John is my assistant (el ayudante), and I dictate (dictar) a letter to him.

I always tell her that she's pretty.

I send them a card (la tarjeta) for their anniversary.

l. What do they give you [sing., informal] for your birthday every year?

Pronoun placement in negative sentences

In a negative statement or clause with one verb, the indirect object pronoun is placed between the word “no” (or other term of negation) and the conjugated verb.

Él **no me** trae nada.

Ellos **no nos** dicen la verdad.

La médica **no te** da medicina.

Nunca os damos regalos.

No le envío la cuenta **jamás**.

No les vendes el pan.

*He **doesn't** bring **me** anything.*

*They **don't** tell **us** the truth.*

*The doctor **doesn't** give **you** medicine.*

*We **never** give **you** gifts.*

*I **never** send **him** the bill.*

*You **don't** sell **them** the bread.*

10.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

He doesn't tell me anything.

I don't tell him anything.

They never send him anything because they don't know his address.

I don't give her money.

The waiter doesn't sing "Happy Birthday" to you.

Why don't they tell her the truth?

Why don't they buy you [pl., informal] a computer (la computadora)?

I serve them dinner, but they never thank (dar las gracias) me.

If you [pl., formal] don't ask me questions (hacer preguntas), I don't tell you lies.

l. We don't lend (prestar) them money.

Pronoun placement in affirmative sentences with two verbs

In a statement or clause that contains two verbs, the first verb is conjugated and the second one remains in the infinitive form. In Spanish, there are two options for placement of the indirect object pronoun: **1.** Place the indirect object pronoun immediately before the first verb, which is conjugated.

Attach the indirect object pronoun directly to the second verb, which is the infinitive form of the verb.

Note that both options are used in writing and in conversation; however, the second option is used more frequently.

Él me quiere dar un regalo.	}	<i>He wants to give me a gift.</i>
Él quiere darme un regalo.		
Tú nos necesitas comprar algo.	}	<i>You need to buy us something.</i>
Tú necesitas comprarnos algo.		
Te puedo decir todo.	}	<i>I can tell you everything.</i>
Puedo decirte todo.		
Os preferimos prestar el dinero.	}	<i>We prefer to lend you the money.</i>
Preferimos prestaros el dinero.		
Él le quiere vender el coche.	}	<i>He wants to sell her the car.</i>
Él quiere venderle el coche.		
Ella les debe alquilar la casa.	}	<i>She should rent the house to them.</i>
Ella debe alquilarles la casa.		

10.5 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the correct indirect object pronoun attached to the

infinitive.

Quiero dar el libro a Jorge.

Quiero _____ el libro.

Necesitamos decir la verdad a ellos.

Necesitamos _____ la verdad.

Ella tiene que prestar el dinero a mí.

Ella tiene que el dinero.

Debéis alquilar el barco a ellos.

Debéis _____ el barco.

Nadie puede decir nada a ti. Nadie puede

Nadie puede _____ nada.

Prefiero escribir una carta a Marta.

Prefiero _____ una carta.

Ellos esperan cantar la canción a vosotros.

Ellos esperan _____ la canción.

El presidente debe decir la verdad a nosotros.

El presidente debe _____ la verdad.

La madre necesita mostrar el amor a su niño.

La madre necesita _____ el amor.

1. Un cómico puede contar chistes (*jokes*) a nosotros.

Un cómico puede _____ chistes.

2. El arquitecto va a diseñar una casa para mí.

El arquitecto va a _____ una casa.

3. Voy a preparar paella para ustedes.

Voy a _____ paella.

4. Voy a decir mi nombre a ellos.

Voy a _____ mi nombre.

5. Juan sólo puede vender los cigarrillos a los adultos.

Juan sólo puede _____ los cigarrillos.

6. El mesero debe servir la cena a nosotros con más rapidez.

El mesero debe _____ la cena con más rapidez.

10.6 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate each of the following sentences into Spanish, making changes to the indirect objects as follows: For items 1 through 5, place the indirect object pronoun before the conjugated verb. For items 6 through 10, attach the indirect object pronoun to the infinitive.

I want to give him a gift.

He needs to tell me the truth.

We should write her a letter.

You [sing., informal] should write to us more often (más a menudo).

You [pl., formal] have to tell them the truth.

We should give them olive oil (el aceite de oliva).

He wants to buy her a diamond (el diamante).

When he comes to our house, he always wants to bring (traer) us something.

I can send you [sing., informal] these vases (el florero) through the mail (por correo).

l. You [pl., informal] need to tell him something.

Pronoun placement in questions and negative sentences with two verbs

In Spanish questions and negative statements with two verbs, the indirect object pronoun can be placed before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive.

¿Quién me va a enviar una cuenta?	}	<i>Who is going to send me a bill?</i>
¿Quién va a enviarme una cuenta?		
Él no nos necesita dar la información.	}	<i>He doesn't need to give us the information.</i>
Él no necesita darnos la información.		
¿Te debemos decir la verdad?	}	<i>Should we tell you the truth?</i>
¿Debemos decirte la verdad?		
No os quiero vender estos collares.	}	<i>I don't want to sell you these necklaces.</i>
No quiero venderos estos collares.		
Nunca le podéis comprar la felicidad.	}	<i>You can never buy happiness for her.</i>
Nunca podéis comprarle la felicidad.		
No les tengo que decir nada.	}	<i>I don't have to tell them anything.</i>
No tengo que decirles nada.		

10.7 EJERCICIO

Respond to each statement or question with two separate sentences in order to show both options for the placement of the indirect object pronoun. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

Do you want to bring me a kitten?

We're not going to show them our new house.

Do you want to sell them these paintings?

Who is going to pay me the money?

Can you send the furniture (los muebles) to us by (para) Tuesday?

The artist can't paint her a picture (el cuadro) by June.

I'm not going to wash your clothing for you.

We don't want to tell you [pl., formal] the bad news (las malas noticias).

When can you [pl., informal] build (construir) the building (el edificio) for us?

l. Should you read her such a letter (tal carta)?

Redundant use of indirect object pronouns

The principal purpose of any pronoun is to *replace* a noun. However, there are times when it is clearer or more emphatic to use *both* the pronoun and **a** + noun or **a** + pronoun. When this occurs with the indirect object pronoun, it is usually in third-person situations.

Below is a list of verbs that frequently take both the pronoun and the **a** + noun or **a** + pronoun construction.

VOCABULARIO

comprar	to buy
dar	to give
decir	to say, tell
escribir	to write
enviar	to send
hacer	to make, do
mandar	to send
pedir	to ask (<i>a favor</i>), request (from)
preguntar	to ask (<i>a question</i>)
preparar	to prepare
regalar	to give a gift
traer	to bring

Yo **le** doy a **Juan** cinco dólares.
Manuel **les** escribe a **sus** padres cada
semana.
Les pregunto a **ellos** si quieren ir.
Le pido a **mi** jefe un aumento.

I give **John** five dollars.
Manuel writes to **his** parents every week.
I ask **them** if they want to go.
I ask **my** boss for a raise.

Note that in the preceding examples, the addition of **a** + noun or **a** + pronoun neither replaces nor adds necessary information. The two reasons to include the **a** + noun or **a** + pronoun in a sentence, clarity and emphasis, are illustrated below.

Clarity

The third-person noun or pronoun helps to clarify the ambiguous third-person pronoun **le**.

Le dije el chiste.
Le dije a **Juan** el chiste.
Le dije el chiste a **él**.
Le dije el chiste a **usted**.
Le dije el chiste a **ella**.

I told **him?**/**her?**/**you?** the joke.
I told **Juan** the joke.
I told **him** the joke.
I told **you** the joke.
I told **her** the joke.

Emphasis

The prepositional phrase adds emphasis to the noun or pronoun.

Juan **me** dijo a **mí** ese chiste.
¿Juan **te** dijo ese chiste a **ti**?
Juan **nos** dijo ese chiste a **nosotros**.
Juan **les** dijo ese chiste a **ellas**.

Juan told **me** that joke.
Juan told **you** that joke?
Juan told **us** that joke.
Juan told **them** that joke.

10.8 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

I tell Juan everything.

I want to tell him everything.

She writes to her aunt every month.

Why do you bring so much (tanto) to Mateo?

She gives the documents to her attorney (el abogado).

She has to give the money to the police (la policía).

Margarita is giving (regalar) us a TV set!

Oliver wants to give (regalar) me a watch from Cartier!

What are you making for (a) your friends? I'm making them a cake (la torta).

1. I bring them a newspaper every morning.

2. I usually buy them [f.] clothing for (para) Christmas.

3. What should we buy her?

4. Romeo sends Julieta roses on Valentine's Day.

5. Are they going to send you [pl., formal] anything this year?

6. George Washington cannot tell a lie (la mentira) to anyone.

Indirect object pronouns with gustar

There is a group of Spanish verbs that use indirect object pronouns in a construction that seems, to many native English speakers, to work in reverse. The most commonly used verb of this type is **gustar** ("to be pleasing to").

In English, one would say, "I like the bread," with "I" as the subject and "the bread" as the direct object. In Spanish, one would say, **Me gusta el pan**. This means literally "The bread is pleasing to me," with "the bread" now the subject

of the sentence (instead of “I”). In this Spanish sentence, “I” has become the indirect object in the form of Spanish **me**.

Because the meaning of the Spanish sentence is “the bread is pleasing *to me*” (since the indirect object often contains or implies the preposition *to*), the indirect object pronoun is needed. This construction is used for the verb **gustar** and other verbs that are used like **gustar**.

The verbs in this section nearly always appear in their third-person singular and plural forms. The things that are being discussed have their effect on people: “Chicago fascinates *me*,” “traffic bothers *you*,” “autobiographies interest *her*,” “gossip is not important *to him*.”

To work with **gustar** and verbs like **gustar**, use the following pattern:
INDIRECT OBJECT PRONOUN + THIRD-PERSON [*sing.* or *pl.*] verb + noun

SINGULAR SUBJECT (NOUN)	PLURAL SUBJECT (NOUN)	
Me gusta la pintura.	Me gustan las pinturas.	<i>I like the painting/paintings. (The painting is liked by me. / The paintings are liked by me.)</i>
Te gusta el anillo.	Te gustan los anillos.	<i>You like the ring/rings. (The ring is liked by you. / The rings are liked by you.)</i>
Le gusta el zorro.	Le gustan los zorros.	<i>He/She likes the fox/foxes. (The fox is liked by him/her. / The foxes are liked by him/her.) You like the fox/foxes. (The fox is liked by you. / The foxes are liked by you.)</i>
Nos gusta la culebra.	Nos gustan las culebras.	<i>We like the snake/snakes. (The snake is liked by us. / The snakes are liked by us.)</i>
Os gusta la lámpara.	Os gustan las lámparas.	<i>You like the lamp/lamps. (The lamp is liked by you. / The lamps are liked by you.)</i>
Les gusta el reloj.	Les gustan los relojes.	<i>They/You like the clock/clocks. (The clock is liked by them/you. / The clocks are liked by them/you.)</i>

When working with **gustar** and verbs like **gustar**, remember the following points: **1.** With the verb **gustar**, if what is liked (or is pleasing) is an action rather than a thing, substitute the infinitive of the appropriate verb for the noun.

Me gusta correr .	<i>I like to run.</i>
No me gusta ni correr ni nadar .	<i>I don't like to run or swim.</i>

To clarify who is being referred to in the third person, precede the clause with **a** + the person's name or **a** + pronoun.

A **Madonna** le gusta cantar.

Madonna likes to sing.

A **Tom Hanks** le gusta estudiar la historia.

Tom Hanks likes to study history.

A **él** le gusta dirigir también.

He also likes to direct.

Adding the person's name or repeating a pronoun adds emphasis. A **mí** me gusta el chisme. *I like gossip.*

A **mí** me gusta el chisme.

I like gossip.

A **ti** te gustan los deportes.

You like sports.

When a noun is used in the abstract, Spanish uses the definite article, whether the referent noun is singular or plural.

A mí me gusta **el** té.

I like tea.

A él le gusta **las** galletas.

He likes cookies.

When what is liked (or is pleasing) is simply "it," as in the sentence "I like it," the English word "it" is not translated into Spanish. The word "it," as the subject of the Spanish sentence is simply understood. This is also true for the plural form "them."

Me gusta.

I like it.

Me gustan.

I like them.

To negate a sentence of this type (for example, "I don't like . . ."), place "no" before the indirect object pronoun.

No me gusta el chisme.

I don't like gossip.

No me gusta.

I don't like it.

EJERCICIO

¿Qué piensas tú? ¿Verdadero o falso?

_____ 1. Me gusta la comida mexicana.

_____ 2. Me gustan los dibujos animados (*cartoons*) en la televisión los sábados por la mañana.

_____ 3. No me gusta cuando una persona me llama por teléfono a las tres de la mañana.

_____ 4. Al presidente de los Estados Unidos le gusta la política.

_____ 5. A Sherlock Holmes le gustan las intrigas.

6. En este país, normalmente nos gusta la democracia.

- _____ 7. A muchas personas les gusta celebrar la Noche Vieja (*New Year's Eve*) en una fiesta.
- _____ 8. A mí no me gusta ir de compras en una tienda muy grande.
- _____ 9. A mi mejor amigo/amiga le gusta bailar en las discotecas.
- _____ 10. A un abogado le gusta ganar los casos.
- _____ 11. No me gusta ni bailar ni cantar delante de muchas personas.
- _____ 12. A Donald Trump le gusta muchísimo el dinero.

10.9 EJERCICIO

*Answer the following questions using **gustar**, either affirmatively or negatively—whichever is true for you. The first item is done for you.*

¿Te gusta la leche?

Sí, me gusta la leche. OR No, no me gusta la leche.

¿Te gustan los dramas de Shakespeare?

¿Te gusta comer en el coche?

¿Te gusta limpiar la casa?

¿Te gustan los platos (*dishes*) exóticos?

¿Te gustan las películas de horror?

¿Te gusta correr?

¿Te gusta memorizar los verbos españoles?

¿Te gustan los mosquitos?

1). ¿Te gusta conducir en la hora punta (*rush hour*)?

Other verbs that take the indirect object pronoun

There are several Spanish verbs that are used like **gustar**—that is, they take the indirect object pronoun and demonstrate the effect that something or someone has on a person.

Below are several frequently used verbs that are used like **gustar**. In some cases, a more common way of expressing the meaning in English follows in brackets.

VOCABULARIO

aburrir	to be boring (to/for someone)
bastar	to be enough (to/for someone)
caer bien (mal)	to like (dislike), to go well (badly) with
disgustar	to be disgusting (to someone) [to hate]
doler (o > ue)	to be painful (to someone) [to hurt, to ache]
encantar	to be enchanting (to someone) [to love]
faltar	to be lacking/missing (to someone) [to need (a thing)]
fascinar	to be fascinating (to someone)
importar	to be important (to someone)
interesar	to be interesting (to someone)
molestar	to be bothersome (to someone) [to bother]
parecer	to seem/appear (to someone)
sobrar	to be left over or extra (to someone)
volver (o > ue) loco/loca	to be crazy (about/for someone) [more intense than encantar]

EJERCICIO

¿Cuál es verdadero o falso para ti?

- _____ 1. Cuando me duele la cabeza, tomo una aspirina.
- _____ 2. Me importa la verdad.
- _____ 3. La arquitectura de Frank Lloyd Wright me fascina.
- _____ 4. Los anuncios (*commercials*) en la televisión me molestan mucho y me aburren también.
- _____ 5. Me disgustan las personas que gruñen (*to grumble*) todo el tiempo.
- _____ 6. A un millonario le sobra el dinero.
- _____ 7. A los actores de Hollywood les encanta ganar el Oscar.
- _____ 8. Me falta el dinero para comprar un diamante de cinco quilates (*carats*).
- _____ 9. A muchos jugadores de tenis les duelen los codos.

- _____ 10. No me importa tener mucho dinero ni vivir en una casa lujosa.
- _____ 11. No me interesan los chismes (*gossip*).
- _____ 12. A mí me parece que las joyas de Tiffany's son las mejores.
- _____ 13. Me vuelve loco/loca el chocolate.
- _____ 14. A un elefante le bastan dos cacahuates (*peanuts*).
- _____ 15. Me caen bien mis amigos.
- _____ 16. Me cae mal la carne con chocolate.

10.10 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the verbs from the vocabulary box on page 82. For some items, clues to the appropriate verb are given in parentheses. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.*

This book fascinates me.

I don't want anything more. I have enough food. (The food is sufficient for me.)

Mikey likes everything.

I hate this movie. (This movie is disgusting to me.)

My eyes hurt.

Nothing is important to him and nothing interests him. How (qué) sad!

I'm missing a button (el botón) on my shirt.

We love your new house!

What's bothering you?

1). These magazines seem absurd (absurdo) to me.

.. After the holidays (los días de fiesta), they don't have (any) money left over.

!. He hates coffee, but I love it.

!. I'm crazy about this play (la obra de teatro).

!. I don't like cookies with raisins. (Cookies with raisins don't go well with me.)

!. She loves sports, but he hates them.

10.11 EJERCICIO

Traducción This paragraph includes usage of several types of pronouns previously covered, as well as indirect object pronouns.

VOCABULARIO	al lado de	next door to
	apagar	to turn out
	(buenos) consejos	(good) advice
	fantástico	great
	las luces	lights
	la nota	note
	parecer	to seem
	por un rato	for a while
	preguntar	to ask
	los prismáticos	binoculars
	la torta	cake
	el vecindario	neighborhood
	el vecino	neighbor

I have a new neighbor. He lives next door to me. He seems (to me) very nice. I like neighbors if they don't bother me. I can make a cake for him or I can write him a note that says, "Welcome to the neighborhood!" I can see him now. These binoculars are great! I can see it all now. I think that I'm going to watch him for a while. No one sees me when I use my binoculars because I turn out all the lights. I love these binoculars. I don't know what I ought to do. I'm going to ask my aunt what she thinks. She always gives me good advice.

11 Reflexive object pronouns

FUNCTION

To indicate that the subject and object of an action are the same person or thing

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Immediately before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“myself,” “yourself,” “himself,” “herself,” “itself,” “ourselves,” “yourselves,” “themselves”

Reflexive pronouns are tiny words that carry the power to change the meaning of a sentence.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
me	<i>myself</i>	nos	<i>ourselves</i>
te	<i>yourself</i>	os	<i>yourselves</i>
se	<i>himself, herself, yourself, itself</i>	se	<i>themselves, yourselves</i>

The principal function of a reflexive object pronoun is to indicate that the action being performed stays with the one who performs it. If *Jane* washes *your* hair, her action has extended to you; thus, that action is not reflexive. However, when *Jane* washes *her own* hair, the action begun by Jane stays with Jane. In this case, the verb **lavarse**, meaning “to wash,” is reflexive, and it requires a reflexive object pronoun.

Jane **te** lava el pelo.

*Jane washes **your** hair.*

(lit., Jane washes the hair on/of you.)

Jane **se** lava el pelo.

*Jane washes **her** hair.*

(lit., Jane washes the hair on/of herself.)

Reflexive verbs in daily routines

Many of the frequently used reflexive verbs refer to the things we do routinely to prepare ourselves for the day. Below are several of the more common reflexive verbs in this category.

VOCABULARIO

afeitarse	to shave oneself
bañarse	to bathe oneself
cepillarse	to brush oneself
ducharse	to take a shower
lavarse	to wash oneself
peinarse	to comb one's hair
pesarse	to weigh oneself
secarse	to dry oneself

Note that when a body part is mentioned, the definite article (**el, la, los, las**) is used to modify it rather than the possessive adjective (**mi, tu, su**, etc.). There are two reasons for this: (1) If *you* are washing the hair *on you*, it has to be *your* hair, so it is redundant to use the possessive adjective, and (2) many native Spanish speakers consider it in poor taste to mention body parts in a direct way.

In English, we generally reserve the use of the reflexive pronouns (“myself,” “yourself,” etc.) for what can be called “full-body experiences”—that is, “I love *myself*,” “she sees *herself* in the full-length mirror,” “they don’t understand *themselves*.” In Spanish, the use is much narrower: Reflexive pronouns are used in situations that deal with a single aspect of our *selves*—for example, teeth, hair, or hands. In English, it is a given that most of us wash our own hair (as opposed to a hair stylist washing our hair), and most of us dress ourselves and brush our own teeth, so we don’t use the reflexive forms to express these actions. If an action doesn’t leave the performer, in Spanish it is expressed with a reflexive verb and reflexive object pronouns.

Me lavo el pelo cada día.
 Nos afeitamos dos veces al día.
 Te pesas cada mañana.
 Os cepilláis los dientes.
 Ella se baña con jabón especial.
 Se lavan las manos.

I wash my hair every day.
We shave twice a day.
You weigh yourself every morning.
You brush your teeth.
She bathes with special soap.
They wash their hands.

11.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción

I take a shower.

I take a bath.

You [sing., informal] *take a shower every day.*

He shaves every morning.

She brushes her teeth three times a day.

We brush our teeth.

They shave twice a day.

He washes his hair.

I wash my face.

1. You [sing., informal] *dry your hair.*

2. You [sing., formal] *dry yourself with a towel* (la toalla).

3. I *comb my hair often* (a menudo).

4. She *almost never* (casi nunca) *combs her hair.*

5. I *weigh myself on the bathroom scale* (la báscula de baño).

6. She *weighs herself twice a day.*

What makes a verb reflexive?

It is important to note that nearly all verbs can be made reflexive. There is nothing magical about a reflexive verb. All it means is that the action is not leaving the performer. You can wash your car (not reflexive) or you can wash your face (reflexive); you can put your child to bed (not reflexive) or you can go to bed yourself (reflexive).

to bed yourself (reflexive).

Because most verbs can be made reflexive, it is impossible to list all or even most of them here. Following are several verbs that are frequently used in the reflexive form because of the nature of the action they represent.

VOCABULARIO

acostarse (o > ue)	to go to bed
casarse (con alguien)	to marry (someone), get married
desmayarse	to faint
despertarse (e > ie)	to wake up
desvestirse (e > i)	to get undressed
dormirse (o > ue)	to fall asleep
enfermarse	to get/become sick
enojarse	to get/become angry
hacerse	to become (<i>voluntarily</i>) (<i>lit.</i> , “to make oneself”)
irse	to go away
levantarse	to stand/get up (<i>lit.</i> , “to lift oneself”)
llamarse	to call oneself, to be called
mirarse	to look at oneself
ponerse	to become (<i>involuntarily, often emotionally</i>)
ponerse (la ropa)	to put on (clothing)
preocuparse (de/por/con)	to worry (about)
probarse (o > ue) (la ropa)	to try on (clothing)
quedarse	to stay, remain
quitarse (la ropa)	to take off (clothing), remove (clothing)
sentarse (e > ie)	to sit down, seat oneself
sentirse (e > ie)	to feel (<i>emotionally, physically</i>)
verse	to see oneself
vestirse (e > i)	to dress oneself

Me quedo en un hotel de lujo.

I stay in a luxury hotel.

Nos vemos en el espejo.

We see ourselves in the mirror.

Te llamas Pedro.

Your name is Pedro. OR You call yourself Pedro.

Os sentáis en los sillones.

You're sitting in the easy chairs.

Nancy se siente enferma.

Nancy feels sick.

Ellas se enferman.

They get sick.

When an item of clothing is mentioned with a reflexive verb, as in the sentence **Elisabeth se pone los zapatos** (“Elisabeth puts on her shoes”), the definite article is used to modify the noun naming the item of clothing. The reason is the same as when parts of the body are mentioned: Because one can assume that a person is putting on his or her own clothes, it would be redundant

to use a possessive pronoun.

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. Me enojo mucho con personas que no toman la responsabilidad por sus acciones.
- _____ 2. Cuando viajo a otra ciudad, siempre me quedo en un hotel de cuatro estrellas.
- _____ 3. Me levanto para cenar y me siento para caminar.
- _____ 4. Si veo sangre (*blood*), me pongo enfermo/enferma y después me desmayo.
- _____ 5. Cuando me enojo con alguien, hablo con esa persona para resolver el problema.
- _____ 6. Es importante ponerse manoplas (*mittens*) y una chaqueta de lana (*wool*) cuando hace mucho frío.
- _____ 7. Siempre me quito los zapatos antes de entrar en la casa.
- _____ 8. Muchas personas se ponen muy furiosas cuando conducen en las autopistas.
- _____ 9. El presidente de la nación se llama Günther.
- _____ 10. Cuando una persona se casa con otra persona, esta ceremonia se llama la boda.
- _____ 11. Cuando una persona se queda en un hotel de lujo, normalmente se siente muy elegante.
- _____ 12. Una persona puede hacerse millonaria si trabaja quince horas al día durante veinte años.
- _____ 13. Me siento triste por las personas pobres del mundo.
- _____ 14. Me cepillo los dientes cada noche antes de acostarme.
- _____ 15. Me levanto a las tres de la mañana.

11.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción

When I try on new clothing, I look at myself in the mirror.

What time (a qué hora) do you [sing., informal] go to bed and what time do you get up?

Normally people get married on (durante) the weekends.

I get sick when I eat food that has a lot of fat (la grasa).

I go (away) to work (al trabajo) every morning at eight o'clock.

I take a shower, I brush my teeth, I dry my hair, I get dressed, and then I go to work.

I become (involuntarily) sick when I see a hair (el pelo) in the food.

Miss America faints when she puts on the crown (la corona).

Every night I get undressed, I put on my pajamas (el pijama), I go to bed, and I fall asleep.

When Laura stays in a hotel, she worries about the safety (la seguridad) of her family.

PREPOSITION + INFINITIVE with the reflexive object pronoun

Any verb that immediately follows a preposition must remain in the infinitive. There is no exception to this rule. When the verb is reflexive, the infinitive itself stays untouched, but the reflexive object pronoun changes to agree with the stated or understood subject and is attached to the end of the infinitive. The subject of the reflexive verb usually can be determined from the context of the sentence.

Yo leo antes de acostarme.
Cenamos después de lavarnos las manos.
Después de quitarse las botas, él entra en la casa.

Antes de dormirse, ellos cuentan ovejas.
En vez de acostarme, voy a quedarme despierto toda la noche.

*I read before going to bed.
We eat dinner after washing our hands.
After taking off his boots, he enters the house.*

*Before falling asleep, they count sheep.
Instead of going to bed, I'm going to stay awake all night long.*

11.3 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the correct reflexive object pronoun.

Antes de vestir _____, yo plancho (iron) la ropa.

Después de bañar _____, Mariana se acuesta.

Antes de ir _____ al trabajo, leemos el periódico.

Después de levantar _____, hago la cama.

Ellos cenan después de sentar _____.

Dorian Gray grita con horror después de ver _____ en el retrato (portrait).

Después de probar _____ diez vestidos y veinte trajes de baño, Cathy se frustra mucho.

Antes de acostar _____, siempre me cepillo los dientes.

Antes de afeitarse _____, preparas la crema de afeitarse.

1. Después de vestirse _____, salís para el trabajo.

2. Necesito champú para lavar _____ el pelo.

3. Ella va a bañarse _____ en vez de ducharse _____ hoy.

11.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción

After getting dressed, I look at myself in the mirror.

Before going away, we put on our coats (el abrigo), mittens (la manopla), and hats.

After taking a bath, I put on my robe (la bata) and I relax (relajarse).

Instead of (en vez de) taking a shower, I'm going to take a bath tonight.

This soap is the best for (para) washing your [sing., formal] face.

I use this shampoo (el champú) for washing my hair.

When I stay in a hotel, I always request a call (la llamada) to (para) wake me up.

He takes a pill (la pastilla) every night in order to (para) fall asleep.

Some people meditate (meditar) in order to relax.

l. You [pl., informal] need a razor (la navaja) and a blade (la hoja) in order to shave (yourselves).

Reflexive object pronouns in sentences with two verbs

In a statement or clause that contains two verbs, the first verb is conjugated and the second one remains in the infinitive form. When that second verb is reflexive, the appropriate reflexive object pronoun is attached directly to the infinitive.

Necesito **lavarme** el pelo.

Tenemos que **irnos** ahora.

¿Cuándo vas a **acostarte**?

Debéis **quitaros** los zapatos.

Ella no puede **verse** en el cristal.

¿Quieren ustedes **quedarse** aquí?

*I need **to wash** my hair.*

*We have **to leave** now.*

*When are you going **to go to bed**?*

*You should **take off** your shoes.*

*She can't **see herself** in the glass.*

*Do you want **to stay** here?*

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

_____ 1. Esta noche voy a acostarme a las once y media.

_____ 2. Durante la semana tengo que levantarme antes de las siete de la mañana.

_____ 3. Debo cepillarme los dientes por lo menos tres veces al día.

_____ 4. Me gusta quedarme en hoteles cuando visito otras ciudades.

- _____ 5. Prefiero probarme ropa nueva en mi casa y no en el probador (*fitting room*) de una tienda.
- _____ 6. Me molesta ponerme tanta ropa en el invierno.
- _____ 7. Quiero enfermarme mucho este año.
- _____ 8. Quiero casarme con una persona famosa y tener fotos de nuestra boda en el *Enquirer*.
- _____ 9. Cuando no puedo dormir, leo.
- _____ 10. Si no tengo tiempo para ducharme en la mañana, me siento sucio/sucia e incómodo/incómoda todo el día.
- _____ 11. No me gusta irme al trabajo sin tomar café primero.
- _____ 12. Muchas personas quieren hacerse ricas algún día.
- _____ 13. Una persona tiene que quitarse la ropa antes de bañarse.
- _____ 14. Muchas personas prefieren quedarse en un Motel 6 para ahorrar dinero.
- _____ 15. Nadie quiere quedarse en un hotel con ratones, ratas, arañas y todo tipo de insectos.

11.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción

For our honeymoon (la luna de miel), we want to stay in an elegant hotel.

Where are you [pl., formal] going to stay in Paris?

I am very warm. I'm going to take off my sweater.

I am very cold. I have to put on my coat.

No one wants to get sick, but unfortunately (desgraciadamente) this happens (ocurrir).

Our dog likes to bathe himself in our neighbor's swimming pool.

If you [sing., informal] want to wash your hair, there is shampoo in the cabinet

(el gabinete).

If you [sing., formal] want to shave, the concierge (el conserje) can give you a razor (la navaja) and some blades (la hoja).

If you [pl., formal] want to get well (bien), you have to eat (tomar) this chicken soup (el caldo de pollo).

l. You [sing., informal] are going to get sick if you eat that raw (crudo) meat.

11.6 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	el bote	(aerosol) can
	callarse	to be quiet
	fastidioso, fastidiosa	fastidious
	la manguera	hose
	más a menudo	more often
	o... o	either... or
	quejarse de	to complain about
	ya	anymore

He never bathes anymore! It's absolutely terrible." My neighbor tells me everything, and today she is complaining about her husband. She is a fastidious woman and complains all the time. She tells me that I should wash my hair more often. I tell her that that is my problem and that she should be quiet. She tells me that she can't be quiet when no one in her family bathes or showers. She tells me that after going to bed, she can't fall asleep because she's worrying about all these people who don't wash themselves. I tell her that she can buy herself either a can of Lysol or a hose.

12 Double-object pronoun order: RID

FUNCTION

To indicate the placement order for two object pronouns in a sentence: reflexive, indirect, direct SPANISH PLACEMENT

Immediately before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive verb, but always in the same order ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

Expressions such as “it to me,” “them for yourself,” “it for myself,” “them for you”

The following chart is a review of the reflexive, indirect, and direct object pronouns.

REFLEXIVE		INDIRECT		DIRECT	
me	nos	me	nos	me	nos
te	os	te	os	te	os
se	se	le	les	lo, la	los, las

RID order

When you have two object pronouns in a sentence, these pronouns always appear in RID order: *reflexive, indirect, direct*. Because the maximum number of pronouns that can appear together is two, the possible combinations are reflexive + indirect (which is rare), reflexive + direct, and indirect + direct. Some examples of the more common combinations are shown below.

Reflexive + Direct

Me lo compro.
Tu pelo es magnífico.
¿Te lo lavas mucho?

I buy it for myself.
Your hair is wonderful.
Do you wash it a lot?

Indirect + Direct

Ellos os los envían.
Yo te la escribo.
Ella me las vende.

They send them to you.
I write it to you.
She sells them to me.

12.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless marked [f.], it and them are masculine. Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

He gives it to me. _____

She tells it to you. _____

We give it to you. _____

I write it [f.] to you. _____

He sends them to us. _____

We sing it [f.] to you. _____

Why do you give it to me? _____

Who has it for you? _____

When do you do it for me? _____

!). Why do you tell it to us? _____

.. I prepare it [f.] for myself. _____

!.. She buys them [f.] for herself. _____

The “la la” rule

The third-person forms of both the direct and indirect object pronouns, regardless of number or gender, begin with the letter *l*. When they appear together, change the indirect object pronoun **le** (the first pronoun) to **se**. This avoids the singsong, tongue-tripping sound of two small words together starting with the letter *l*. We call this the “la la rule.”

Consider the sentence “I give it [m.] to him.” The indirect object is “him” (**le**) and the direct object is “it” (**lo**). Thus in Spanish we would initially have **Yo le lo doy**. Because of the “la la” rule, however, we change the indirect object pronoun **le** to **se**, and the resulting sentence is **Yo se lo doy**.

This change in spelling to accommodate ease of pronunciation could make such a sentence incomprehensible. However, we use pronouns only when their antecedents are understood from the context of the paragraph or conversation. Therefore, while looking at **se lo doy** without any prior knowledge might make the sentence virtually meaningless, knowledge of the referents makes the sentence completely understandable.

Tú conoces a Juan. Mejor **se lo** dices tú.
Tenemos muchos lápices que no
necesitamos. **Se los** damos.

Los padres de Enrique lo miman. Si él
quiere una bicicleta, ellos **se la**
compran.

A mi mamá le fascinan los chocolates.
Por eso, **se los** envío.

*You know Juan. It's better if you tell **it to him**.*

We have a lot of pencils we don't need.

*We give **them to you** [sing., formal].*

*Enrique's parents spoil him. If he wants a bicycle,
they buy **it for him**.*

*My mother loves chocolates. That's why I send
them to her.*

12.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless marked [f.], it and them are masculine. Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you unless indicated otherwise.

He sings it [f.] to her. _____

We tell it to them. _____

You buy them for him. _____

I write it for you [pl., formal]. _____

He sends them to them. _____

I tell it to her. _____

He sells it [f.] to her. _____

You give them [f.] to him. _____

No one tells it to her. _____

1. Why do you tell it to him? _____

2. We bring them [f.] to them [f.]. _____

3. She cooks it for them. _____

4. I make them [f.] for you [pl., formal]. _____

5. Do you make them for them? _____

6. Who gives it to them? _____

Two pronouns in a negative statement

In a negative sentence or clause in which the RID rules apply, place the word “no” (or other word of negation) immediately before the first pronoun. In the examples below, note the effect of the “la la” rule, and watch for sentences like these in the exercises that follow.

No te lo tengo.
No se los tengo.
Nunca se la compran.
No nos las vendemos.

*I don't have it for you.
I don't have **them** for **them**.
They **never** buy it for her.
We don't sell **them** to ourselves.*

12.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless marked [f.], it and them are masculine. Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you unless indicated otherwise.

She doesn't tell it to me. _____

I don't tell it to him. _____

We don't buy them [f.] for ourselves. _____

They don't send it [f.] to us on time (a tiempo).

She doesn't make it for us every day. _____

I don't give it [f.] to them. _____

He doesn't pay me for it in cash (en efectivo).

He doesn't give it to me on time. _____

Why don't you send it [f.] to her tomorrow? _____

10. Don't you buy them [f.] for them every day?

11. I never buy them for myself. _____

12. We never tell them to her. _____

Two pronouns in sentences with two verbs

In a statement or clause that contains two verbs, the first verb is conjugated and the second one remains in the infinitive form. The placement of the two object pronouns follows the same pattern that has been seen with individual pronouns. The object pronouns—kept together—may either be placed before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive. In addition, they always appear in RID order: reflexive, indirect, direct.

In these examples, the two pronouns are placed before the conjugated verb.

me las quiere entregar
nos los debe vender
se lo podemos mostrar

he wants to give **them** to **me**
he ought to sell **them** to **us**
we can show **it** to **them**

Note that the “la la” rule comes into play in third-person situations.

When the two object pronouns are attached directly to the infinitive, a written accent must be added in order for the infinitive to retain its natural stress, which always falls on the final syllable. Therefore, a written accent is placed over the vowel in the stressed syllable of the infinitive.

entregar + me + las > entregármelas	<i>to give them to me</i>
vender + nos + los > vendérmolos	<i>to sell them to us</i>
mostrar + se + lo > mostrárselo	<i>to show it to them</i>
Te lo quiero dar. Quiero dártelo.	<i>I want to give it to you.</i>
Se lo queremos decir. Queremos decírselo.	<i>We want to say it to him.</i>
Me la tienes que enviar. Tienes que enviármela.	<i>You have to send it to me.</i>
Os lo necesitáis poner. Necesitáis ponérselo.	<i>You need to put it on yourselves.</i>
Ella se lo puede hacer. Ella puede hacérselo.	<i>She can do it for herself.</i>
Ustedes nos lo pueden esconder. Ustedes pueden escondérmolos.	<i>You can hide it from us.</i>

12.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción Express each of the following statements in two complete sentences showing the two options for placement of the object pronouns. Unless marked [f.], it and them are masculine. Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you unless indicated otherwise.

I want to tell it to you.

I want to buy it [f.] for you.

You have to give it to me.

We have to sell them to you.

We have to sell it to her.

They should buy them [f.] for you.

They should buy it for themselves.

She needs to send it [f.] to me.

You [pl., formal] have to give it [f.] to us.

l. I should bring it to them.

.. They should bring them [f.] to me.

!. She wants to sing it [f.] for us.

h. You can send it to me by mail (por correo).

h. He can pay you for it [f.] in cash.

i. *I want to pay you [pl., informal] for them by check (con un cheque).*

Questions and negative statements with two verbs

In a negative sentence with two verbs, place the word “no” (or other word of negation) before the conjugated verb. If you also place the pronouns before the conjugated verb, the word “no” precedes the pronouns. If you attach the pronouns to the infinitive, the word “no” immediately precedes the conjugated verb.

For questions, add question marks but maintain the order of the sentence elements (subject and verb).

To add the subject (either a noun or pronoun) to a negative statement or a question, place it at the very beginning of the sentence. It should always be placed before the conjugated verb; it should appear before the “no” if the statement or question is negative.

No te lo quiero dejar .	}	<i>I don't want to leave it for you.</i>
No quiero dejártelo .		
No se lo tenemos que comprar .	}	<i>We don't have to buy it for him.</i>
No tenemos que comprárselo .		
¿ Me lo quieres dejar ?	}	<i>Do you want to leave it for me?</i>
¿Quieres dejármelo ?		
¿ Me lo podéis escribir ?	}	<i>Can you write it for me?</i>
¿Podéis escribírmelo ?		
¿Marcos no se lo necesita regalar ?	}	<i>Doesn't Marcos need to give it to her?</i>
¿Marcos no necesita regalárselo ?		
Ellos nunca se lo saben decir .	}	<i>They never know how to tell it to her.</i>
Ellos nunca saben decírselo .		

12.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción Express each of the following statements in two complete sentences showing the two options for placement of the object pronouns. Unless marked [f.], it and them are masculine. Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you unless indicated otherwise.

Can you do it for me?

No, I can't do it for you.

Do we have to tell it [f.] to him?

When do you want to give them [f.] to them?

You don't need to pay me for it now.

They can't sell it to you in the United States.

We can't sell it [f.] to them at this price.

When do you want to tell it to me?

Aren't you going to bring it to us today?

l. Can't they send them [f.] to us by mail (por correo) ?

12.6 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	algo	something
	el avión privado	private jet
	las flores	flowers
	las joyas	jewelry
	el perfume	perfume
	regalar	to give (a gift)

Every year I receive lots of presents for my birthday. I have lots of friends who have stores, and they always give me what they sell or what they make. And for their birthdays, I always give them presents too. My friend Merlin sells flowers, and he gives them to me. Manolo sells shoes, and he gives them to me. Juan sells coffee, and he gives it to me. Vidal sells shampoo, and he gives it to me. Paloma makes perfume, and she sends it to me, because she lives in Spain. Donna makes dresses, and she sends them to me. Elsa makes jewelry, and she always makes me something special for my birthday. This year I want a private jet. Who is going to give it to me?

13 Reciprocal pronouns

FUNCTION

To indicate an action that goes back and forth between two or more subjects

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Immediately before the conjugated verb or attached directly to the infinitive

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“each other,” “one another,” “ourselves,” “yourselves,” “themselves”

The term *reciprocity* indicates that an action is reciprocal, or occurring between or among all the interested parties in an equal manner. If I see you, but you don’t see me, there is no reciprocity. However, when we see each other, the action is *reciprocal*.

Since reciprocity occurs only when two or more persons are involved, the reciprocal pronouns exist only in the plural forms. Thus, the phrases “each other” and “one another” are frequently used in sentences involving reciprocal pronouns. The pronouns used to express reciprocity are identical to the plural reflexive pronouns.

<i>nos</i>	<i>ourselves, each other, one another</i>
<i>os</i>	<i>yourselves, each other, one another</i>
<i>se</i>	<i>themselves, yourselves, each other, one another</i>

NOTE All rules of syntax that apply to reflexive pronouns also apply to reciprocal pronouns.

People often stumble over when to use “each other” and “one another” in English. Because of the reciprocal pronoun **se**, this is not an issue in Spanish. The distinction is simple: Use “each other” when referring to precisely two people. Use “one another” when referring to more than two people. Learn and employ this distinction now so that you come across as the intelligent person you are.

Nos vemos cada día.

¿**Os conocéis** bien?

Ellos **no pueden escribirse** muy a menudo.

Siempre **nos encontramos** en el supermercado pero **nunca nos hablamos**.

We see each other every day.

Do you know one another well?

They can’t write to one another very often.

We always run into each other at the supermarket, but we never speak (to each other).

13.1 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the correct reciprocal pronoun. (Hint: The conjugated verb provides a clue.) Then translate the sentence into English.

_____ conocemos muy bien.

_____ Ellos quieren mucho.

_____ veis por la ventana.

_____ ¿conocen ustedes?

_____ besan cada mañana.

_____ Cada día decimos “te quiero.”

7. _____ Cuando ellos están enojados, no hablan.

_____ ¿visitáis con frecuencia?

_____ Ellos pelean (*fight*) mucho porque odian.

8. _____ hablamos por teléfono tres veces cada semana.

9. _____ Ellos quieren conocer mejor.

10. _____ No podemos ver tan a menudo como queremos.

13.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción

We write long letters to each other every week.

When do you [pl., informal] see each other?

Why do they yell at (gritar) each other so much?

The lovebirds (los tórtolos) sing to each other in the treetop (la copa del árbol).

We buy one another gifts every December.

The five friends run into one another at the gym (el gimnasio) every Friday afternoon.

We can't speak to each other because my telephone doesn't work (funcionar).

You [pl., formal] shouldn't tell each other everything. He can't keep (guardar) a secret.

You [pl., informal] can look at each other now.

l. My neighbors yell at one another every Saturday night.

13.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	al mismo tiempo	<i>at the same time</i>
	asistir	<i>to attend</i>
	delicado, delicada	<i>tricky</i>
	la escuela secundaria	<i>high school</i>
	existir	<i>to exist</i>
	ilusionado, ilusionada	<i>excited</i>
	lo cual	<i>which</i>
	la pareja	<i>couple (romantic)</i>
	la reunión	<i>reunion</i>
	tal vez	<i>maybe</i>
	ya no + CONJUGATED VERB	<i>not . . . anymore</i>

I'm going to my high school reunion in two weeks. I'm very excited, because Henry is going to attend. I know this because Laura, my best friend, is the secretary of the class. She and I talk to each other every week, and she tells me everything. These reunions are tricky. We want to see one another, but at the same time we don't want to see one another. Or, maybe, we want to see one another in the past, which doesn't exist anymore. It's especially hard for romantic couples. Some former couples see each other after many years, and it is wonderful. But there are other ex-couples who see each other, and it's a horrible experience.

14 The pronoun **se** and the passive voice

FUNCTION

To indicate that an action is performed by an unspecified subject

SPANISH PLACEMENT

Immediately before the conjugated verb in the third-person singular and plural only

ENGLISH EQUIVALENTS

“it,” “you,” “we,” “they,” “one,” “anybody,” “a person,” *etc.*

The passive voice

The passive voice is used to describe an action that is carried out but has no specific, identified agent. For example, in the sentence “The doors are unlocked at 5:30,” there is no identified subject or agent. We don’t know *who* actually unlocks the doors. The following examples contrast the active and passive voices.

ACTIVE VOICE	PASSIVE VOICE
<i>Paul closes the shop at 9:00.</i>	<i>The shop is closed at 9:00.</i>
<i>Sue heard a baby crying.</i>	<i>A baby’s cries were heard.</i>
<i>The wind blew down the tree.</i>	<i>The tree was blown down.</i>

Each sentence in the active voice has a specific subject, but the corresponding sentence in the passive voice has an unspecified subject: We don’t know *who* closes the shop, *who* heard the baby’s cries, or *what* blew down the tree.

There are two ways to express the passive voice in Spanish: (1) using a form of **ser** and a participle and (2) using **se** and a conjugated form of the verb.

Joaquín es respetado .	}	<i>Joaquín is respected.</i>
Se respeta a Joaquín.		
La fortaleza fue destruida .	}	<i>The fortress was destroyed.</i>
La fortaleza se destruyó .		

In both of these examples, the passive voice expresses the result of an action, but not the agent or performer of the action.

Formation of the passive voice with **se**

To use **se** as a substitute for the passive voice in Spanish, place **se** before the conjugated verb in the third person. If the noun following the verb is singular, conjugate the verb in the third-person singular. If that noun is plural or if there is a series of nouns, conjugate the verb in the third-person plural.

Se habla español en México.
Se hablan inglés y francés en Canadá.
Se vende plata en esta joyería.
No se venden joyas aquí.
Las historietas no se consideran obras literarias.

*Spanish is spoken in Mexico.
English and French are spoken in Canada.
Silver is sold at this jewelry store.
Jewels are not sold here.
Comic books are not considered literary works.*

14.1 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the correct form of the verb given in parentheses.

- Se _____ (vender) ropa en Bloomingdale's.
Se _____ (comer) mucho pescado en Japón.
Se _____ (hacer) películas en Hollywood.
Se _____ (bailar) la rumba y el mambo en Cuba.
Se _____ (cultivar) café y azúcar en El Salvador.
Se _____ (exportar) oro, azúcar, café y níquel de la República Dominicana.
Se _____ (bailar) flamenco en España.
Se _____ (fabricar) coches en Detroit.
Se _____ (limar = *to file*) las uñas en el salón de belleza.
). Se _____ (fabricar) papel en el noroeste de los Estados Unidos.

14.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción

Spanish is spoken here.

Spanish and French are spoken here.

Shoes are sold there.

Fireworks (los fuegos artificiales) are not sold to teenagers (el adolescente).

Entrance (la entrada) is not permitted (permitir) before 10:00.

Cameras are not permitted in the theater.

Gold and jewels are not considered good investments (la inversión).

The stores and the museums are closed on Tuesdays.

The bank is closed at two thirty.

1. Piñatas are made (fabricar) in this factory (la fábrica).

Using se to indicate an impersonal subject

In Spanish, as in English, an impersonal subject is frequently used. In Spanish, **se** is used to indicate an impersonal subject—both singular and plural. For example, in the sentence **Se baila la cumbia en Colombia** (“They dance the cumbia in Colombia”), we don’t know specifically who “they” is. There are no names or faces attached. The subject could refer to many people in general, but in fact refers to no one in particular.

In English, another common impersonal subject is the word “you,” as in “You shouldn’t call me after nine.” Other frequently used impersonal subjects in English include “one,” “it,” “people,” “anybody,” and “no one,” some of which are singular and some plural. All of these ways of expressing impersonal subjects in English are covered in Spanish by the pronoun **se**.

No se debe matar.	{ <i>One shouldn't kill.</i> <i>You shouldn't kill.</i>
¡Así se hace!	{ <i>That's how it's done!</i> <i>That's how you do it!</i>
¿Qué se puede hacer?	{ <i>What's a person to do?</i> <i>What can one do?</i>
Jamás se explicó el asesinato.	{ <i>They never explained the murder.</i> <i>No one ever explained the murder.</i>
En este club se baila la cumbia y el mambo, pero no la Macarena.	{ <i>In this club, they dance the cumbia and the mambo, but not the Macarena.</i> <i>In this club, people dance the cumbia and the mambo, but not the Macarena.</i>

Note that in the examples above showing an impersonal subject, the third-person singular form of the verb is always used in Spanish, even in those cases when the English expression uses a plural verb. However, in Spanish, when the third-person plural form of the verb is used to express the same concept, the reflexive **se** is dropped, as shown in the examples below.

Se me conoce aquí. Me conocen aquí.	} <i>They know me here.</i>
Aquí se produce el mejor café. Aquí producen el mejor café.	} <i>They produce the best coffee here.</i>
Se dice que no se puede fumar en ninguna parte. Dicen que no se puede fumar en ninguna parte.	} <i>They say that you can't smoke anywhere.</i>

Most platitudes employ an impersonal subject with the **se** construction, as shown in the example below.

Se puede dirigir el caballo al agua... *You can lead a horse to water . . .*

14.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción

You should pay your taxes (los impuestos) every April.

You can't be in two places at the same time (al mismo tiempo).

You need to change the oil (el aceite) in your car every (cada) three thousand miles.

One shouldn't blame (culpar) others for the results (el resultado) of his/her

actions.

One should exercise (hacer ejercicio) and meditate (meditar) daily.

They should make these maps clearer. You can't read this!

You can't get (extraer) blood from a turnip (el nabo).

You can't judge (juzgar) a book by its cover (la portada).

People should brush their teeth after (después de) eating.

1. You can swim and play tennis in this club.

2. In order to dance La Bamba, you need a little bit of grace (una poca de gracia).

3. They never explained the UFOs (el OVNI).

4. Can one go in (entrar) ?

5. In this store, people pay a fixed price (un precio fijo).

6. It is said that you should look before (antes de) you leap (saltar).

The passive voice with inanimate objects

We often speak of actions that take place for which there is no—or at least no apparent—human element involved in the action, for example, “My car breaks down on me every winter.” We also refer to actions that clearly are performed by humans, but for which the mention of those humans is irrelevant, for example, “The store opens at 10:00.”

In such situations, use the passive voice, which allows us to ignore the

performer of the action and focus on the action itself. If the noun is singular, use the singular form of the verb; if the noun is plural, use the plural form.

Se abre la tienda a las diez.	}	<i>The store opens at ten.</i>
La tienda se abre a las diez.		
Se abren las tiendas a las diez.	}	<i>The stores open at ten.</i>
Las tiendas se abren a las diez.		
Se estropea mi coche cada invierno.	}	<i>My car breaks down every winter.</i>
Mi coche se estropea cada invierno.		
Se arreglan los pantalones en esta sastrería.	}	<i>Pants are fixed in this tailor's shop.</i>
Los pantalones se arreglan en esta sastrería.		

Note that the noun can either precede or follow the verb.

14.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción

The mall (el centro comercial) closes at nine thirty.

I get angry when I pay seven dollars to see a movie, and the projector (el proyector) breaks down (descomponerse).

Lightbulbs (la bombilla) usually burn out (quemarse) after one hundred hours.

When a car breaks down (estropearse) on the freeway (la autopista), it's a catastrophe (el catástrofe) for everyone.

What time does that restaurant open?

The sun sets (ponerse) at 8:30 P.M. in the summer.

With this appliance (el aparato), your lights turn on (encenderse) and turn off (apagarse) automatically (automáticamente).

After the holidays (los días de fiesta), millions of toys break (romperse).

When she sings, all the glasses break (quebrarse).

l. The museums close at six sharp (en punto).

14.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	A ver	<i>Let's see</i>
	alquilar	<i>to rent</i>
	así que	<i>so</i>
	asistir a	<i>to attend</i>
	el barquito	<i>(little) boat</i>
	el cochinillo asado	<i>roast piglet</i>
	la corrida	<i>bullfight</i>
	de todo	<i>everything</i>
	el estanque	<i>pond</i>
	el folleto	<i>brochure</i>
	maravilloso, maravillosa	<i>marvelous</i>
	mejores	<i>greatest [pl.]</i>
	el metro	<i>subway</i>
	el museo	<i>museum</i>
	pasar	<i>to spend (time)</i>
	precioso, preciosa	<i>lovely</i>
	probar (o > ue)	<i>to try</i>
	próximo, próxima	<i>next</i>
	recorrer	<i>to go around</i>
	el sistema	<i>system</i>
	el sitio	<i>site</i>
	el tesoro	<i>treasure</i>
	las vacaciones	<i>vacation</i>
	varios, varias	<i>several</i>

I want to go to Madrid for my next vacation. I have a brochure with me now. Let's see! What can a person do in Madrid? They say here that the Prado is one of the world's greatest museums and that you can spend several days exploring its treasures. It says that in Madrid the subway system is very good, so one doesn't need to rent a car. You can take the subway to all the sites in the city. If you go to a good restaurant in Madrid, you can try roast piglet. Also, El Retiro is a lovely park, and people can rent little boats to go around the pond. You can

attend the bullfights, and you can dance until five o'clock in the morning. You can do everything in this marvelous city!

II

PREPOSITIONS

15 Prepositions and prepositional phrases

A *preposition* is the part of speech that shows the relationship of a noun or pronoun to another word in a phrase, clause, or sentence.

Prepositions are often referred to as “those little words.” But they are little words that mean a lot, because prepositions reveal place, time, direction, manner, and connection, among other things. Compound prepositions are made up of multiple “little words” that express one prepositional meaning.

Because prepositions are quite specific in meaning, it is important to study them in depth. As a rule, you cannot substitute one preposition for another, so it is important to know precisely which preposition to use in a given situation.

For the most part, prepositions are used to show the relationships between nouns and pronouns.

Estoy **con** Carlota.

Roberto está **cerca de** mi casa.

¿Estás **en** el hospital?

El gato está **encima del** estante.

*I am **with** Carlota.*

*Roberto is **near** my house.*

*You are **in** the hospital?*

*The cat is **on top of** the bookshelf.*

Each of the prepositions used in the examples above shows the relationship between the subject of the sentence (“I,” “Roberto,” “you,” “cat”) and the object of the preposition (“Carlota,” “house,” “hospital,” “bookshelf”). The preposition and its object together form a prepositional phrase.

To change a preposition is to change the meaning of the sentence entirely, as is shown in the sentences that follow.

Estoy **lejos de** Carlota.

Roberto está **en** mi casa.

¿Estás **al lado del** hospital?

El gato está **detrás del** estante.

*I am **far from** Carlota.*

*Roberto is **in** my house.*

*You are **next door to** the hospital?*

*The cat is **behind** the bookshelf.*

The nouns and pronouns in the examples above are linked by the preposition itself, but they are also linked by a verb, often the verb “to be.” (In Spanish, depending on the context, the linking verb is either **ser** or **estar**.) In these examples, you find “I *am*,” “Roberto *is*,” “you *are*,” “the cat *is*.”

Functions of prepositional phrases

Prepositional phrases can perform many different functions in a sentence. At times, a prepositional phrase modifies a noun and has an adjectival function, often identifying *which one?* Other times, a prepositional phrase modifies a verb and has an adverbial function, such as answering the question *where?* Although the prepositional phrase itself may not change, its use in the sentence does. Note the differences in the examples that follow.

Prepositional phrase used as an adjective (“which one?”)

El coche en el garaje es azul.	<i>The car in the garage is blue.</i>
John es el muchacho detrás de la pared .	<i>John is the boy behind the wall.</i>

Prepositional phrase used as an adverb (“where?”)

El coche está en el garaje .	<i>The car is in the garage.</i>
John camina detrás de la pared .	<i>John walks behind the wall.</i>

Prepositions that show a relationship between nouns and/or pronouns

The principal function of a preposition is to demonstrate the relationship between two or more people or things. This relationship can be abstract, as in “He sings songs *about* love,” or it can be physical and concrete, as in “The book is *on* the table.”

Escribe poemas acerca del amor.	<i>She writes poems about love.</i>
Quiero un libro sobre economía.	<i>I want a book on economics.</i>
La silla está contra la pared.	<i>The chair is against the wall.</i>
Además de tacos, Lola prepara la salsa.	<i>In addition to tacos, Lola prepares the salsa.</i>

Below are several frequently used prepositions, which are used in the exercises that follow.

VOCABULARIO

acerca de	about
además de	besides, in addition to
con	with
contra	against
en lugar de	instead of
en vez de	instead of
excepto	except
menos	except
salvo	except
según	according to
sin	without
sobre	about, on (<i>topic</i>)

EJERCICIO

¿Cuál es verdadero o falso para ti?

- _____ 1. Yo sé mucho acerca de Hollywood.
- _____ 2. Me gusta el té con limón y azúcar.
- _____ 3. En la Serie Mundial, la Liga Nacional juega contra la Liga Americana.
- _____ 4. Según mi mejor amigo/amiga, un día sin café es un día sin valor.
- _____ 5. Yo como todo tipo de comida, excepto chocolate.
- _____ 6. Aristóteles escribió ensayos sobre filosofía.
- _____ 7. Yo estudio matemáticas además de español.
- _____ 8. Según la Biblia, Adán y Eva fueron las primeras personas del mundo.
- _____ 9. Siempre dejo mis zapatos contra la pared.
- _____ 10. Tengo un libro sobre la historia de Francia.
- _____ 11. Me gusta oír noticias acerca de mis amigos.
- _____ 12. Además de ropa, Bloomingdale's vende muebles, coches y refrigeradores.
- _____ 13. Yo soy una persona sin problemas.
- _____ 14. Nadie, menos los niños pequeños, cree que existe Santa Claus.
- _____ 15. En este momento estoy con mi mejor amigo/amiga.
- _____ 16. Tomo té en vez de café.

15.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.
He always talks about his girlfriend.

I prefer coffee with milk and sugar.

He prefers tea without sugar.

Don Quijote is the best novel in the world, according to José.

In addition to flowers, her boyfriend gives her candy (los dulces) on every date (la cita).

The director's back (la espalda) is against the wall.

This book is about George Washington.

They don't write much about their problems.

Do you want pizza with meat (la carne) or without meat?

1. I like everything here except the shoes.

2. His thesis (la tesis) is about the art of Rome.

3. According to Julia, her friends know nothing about classical music.

4. I want everything against the wall, except the podium (el podio).

5. You have to serve the drinks (la bebida) in addition to the food.

i. *The library doesn't have anything about the history of the pizza.*

Prepositions of location

A very common function of the preposition is to tell where someone or something is located physically in relation to someone or something else, for example, “The bike is *in front of* the house” and “Mario is *to the left of* Susana.”

Several of the prepositions of location are made up of more than one word. These are called compound prepositions. They must be followed by a noun or a pronoun just as one-word prepositions are.

El coche está **delante de** la casa.

*The car is **in front of** the house.*

Juan está **a la derecha de** Carmen.

*Juan is **to the right of** Carmen.*

Note that because these prepositions show location, the verb **estar** is frequently used.

There is one exception to using **estar** to show location: When telling where an event takes place, use **ser**.

LOCATION María **está en** el teatro.

*María **is in** the theater.*

EVENT El concierto **es en** el teatro.

*The concert **is in** the theater. OR
The concert **is at** the theater.*

Understanding the Spanish **en**

It is important to understand the Spanish preposition **en**, which expresses the English meanings “in,” “on,” “into,” and “at.” Prepositions in Spanish can have very literal meanings. For example, to express in English that you have a job with the Sears department store, you would probably say, “I work *at* Sears.” The reality, however, is that when you are working, you are physically *in* the Sears store, and so to express the same idea in Spanish, you would say, **Trabajo en Sears**. See the sentences below for more examples of how Spanish **en** can be expressed in English.

Estoy **en** su casa.

*I am **in** his house.*

El cuadro está **en** la pared.

*The painting is **on** the wall.*

Echa jugo **en** los vasos.

*She pours juice **into** the glasses.*

Estoy **en** la puerta de su casa.

*I am **at** the door of his house.*

Miro los retratos **en** el museo.

*I look at the portraits **at** the museum.*

Compro mi ropa **en** Bloomingdale's.

*I buy my clothing **at** Bloomingdale's.*

Below are several frequently used prepositions of location.

VOCABULARIO

a	at
a la derecha de	to the right of
a la izquierda de	to the left of
a través de	across
al lado de	next to, next door to
cerca de	near, close to, by
con	with
debajo de	under
delante de	in front of
dentro de	inside
detrás de	behind
en	in, on, into, at
encima de	on top of
enfrente de	across from, opposite
entre (<i>dos personas o cosas</i>)	between (<i>two people or things</i>)
entre (<i>varias personas o cosas</i>)	among (<i>several people or things</i>)
frente a	facing
fuera de	outside
junto a	by, next to, next door to
lejos de	far from
sobre	on top of, above

EJERCICIO

¿Cuál es verdadero o falso para ti?

- _____ 1. Hay un árbol delante de mi casa.
- _____ 2. En mi sala, hay una lámpara a la izquierda del sofá.
- _____ 3. Mi coche está dentro del garaje ahora.
- _____ 4. Hay una luz sobre la mesa en el comedor.
- _____ 5. Hay mucho polvo (*dust*) debajo de mi cama.
- _____ 6. Alguien está a la derecha de mí ahora.
- _____ 7. Hay un farol (*streetlight*) fuera de mi ventana.
- _____ 8. Vivo cerca de una biblioteca pública.
- _____ 9. El garaje está detrás de mi casa.
- _____ 10. Mi mejor amigo/amiga vive enfrente de un restaurante.
- _____ 11. Canadá está lejos de Europa.

- _____ 11. Canada está lejos de Europa.
- _____ 12. El estado de Kansas está entre Colorado y Missouri.
- _____ 13. Usualmente, un partido de béisbol es en un estadio.
- _____ 14. Al lado de mi casa hay un jardín.
- _____ 15. Las antenas encima de mi casa mejoran la recepción del televisor.
- _____ 16. En la corte, los abogados están frente al juez (*judge*).

15.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.
There is a book on top of the table.

John is to the right of me, and Felipe is to the left of Elena.

Do you live next door to our restaurant?

Every spring we plant (sembrar) flowers in front of the house.

We need more light (la iluminación) above the paintings (el cuadro).

People (la gente) across the country watch (mirar) the Olympics (los juegos olímpicos) on television.

My favorite song is "Close to You."

Many people want to live far from the airport (el aeropuerto).

Do you know that there is a tiger (el tigre) under your bed?

1). Why are there so many (tanto) dogs outside your house?

.. Who is in the kitchen with Dinah?

1. *What do you have inside your mouth?*

2. *He works at the bank.*

3. *They are in the bank.*

4. *There isn't anything on television tonight.*

5. *There is nothing between us.*

6. *Who is behind you?*

7. *The play (la obra) is in the theater.*

Prepositions of movement

In addition to telling *which one?* and *where?*, prepositions can indicate movement—where someone or something is going. In the sentences that follow, the same prepositional phrase (**a lo largo de**, meaning “along”) has an adjectival function in the first sentence and an adverbial function in the second, where it indicates movement in addition to location.

Estas conchas **a lo largo de** la playa
son hermosas.

*These shells **along** the beach are beautiful.*

Ayer, caminé **a lo largo de** la playa.

*Yesterday, I walked **along** the beach.*

VOCABULARIO

a lo largo de	along
alrededor de	around
hacia	toward
más allá de	beyond
por	through, throughout

15.3 EJERCICIO

Underline the correct preposition in parentheses to complete each of the following sentences.

Es muy romántico caminar (a lo largo de | de lado) la playa.

No puedo ver (hacia adelante | más allá de) las estrellas.

Para hacer ejercicio todos los días, Jorge corre diez veces (hacia atrás | alrededor de) la pista (*track*).

El coche pasa (por | de lado) el túnel.

Para ir a Canadá, necesitas conducir (por | hacia) el norte.

No quiero andar en bicicleta (a lo largo de | hacia adelante) la autopista. Es demasiado peligroso.

Si tú vas (hacia | alrededor de) el este, en dos o tres cuadras (*blocks*) vas a ver la tienda que buscas.

El ladrón (*robber*) buscó (alrededor de | por) la casa hasta encontrar el oro.

Los niños no deben ir (más allá de | de lado) este punto.

l. En el juego “Sillas musicales,” caminamos (más allá de | alrededor de) las sillas.

15.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.*
I run around the lake every morning.

Do you walk along the boulevard (el bulevar) ?

The detective searches throughout the house.

He’s always looking toward his goals (la meta).

Superman can fly (volar) through the air.

Every evening they walk through the mall (el centro comercial).

If you look beyond that tree, you can see the roller coaster (la montaña rusa).

Do you want to walk around the block (la cuadra) with me?

You can't go beyond the end (el final) of this block.

1. We can drive (conducir) toward the river and then walk along the path (la senda).

.. Nancy Kerrigan can skate (patinar) forward and backward.

!. Superman can fly, but he doesn't fly backwards.

Prepositions of geographical orientation

To give geographical directions or to describe location in geographical terms requires a prepositional phrase in Spanish. Note that in English, we often say "north of" instead of "to the north of." When using the Spanish expressions, however, be sure to keep the complete phrase in mind. Below are several frequently used prepositions that indicate geographical orientation.

VOCABULARIO

al este de	(to the) east of
al nordeste/noreste de	(to the) northeast of
al noroeste de	(to the) northwest of
al norte de	(to the) north of
al oeste de	(to the) west of
al sudeste/sureste de	(to the) southeast of
al sudoeste/suroeste de	(to the) southwest of
al sur de	(to the) south of

Hay una gasolinera **al norte del** supermercado. *There's a gas station **north of** the supermarket.*

La mina está **al nordeste del** bosque. *The mine is **to the northeast of** the forest.*

15.5 EJERCICIO

Look at the map of the central United States below. With Missouri as your point of reference, answer the following questions with a complete sentence, using

prepositions of geographical location. (The first item has been done for you.)



¿Dónde está Iowa? Iowa está al norte de Missouri.

¿Dónde está Arkansas? _____

¿Dónde está Kansas? _____

¿Dónde está Illinois? _____

¿Dónde está Michigan? _____

¿Dónde está Nebraska? _____

¿Dónde está Oklahoma? _____

¿Dónde está Tennessee? _____

¿Dónde está Louisiana? _____

l. ¿Donde esta Minnesota? _____

Prepositions of origin and destination

Prepositions are used to express origin and destination. In actuality, these prepositions are variations of prepositions that show movement. Think of these prepositions as revealing motion in time. Mentally, to reach the origin of something, you move toward the past; to reach a destination, you move toward the future. Below are several frequently used prepositions that indicate origin and destination.

VOCABULARIO

Origin

a causa de	because of, for
de	from, of
de (to indicate authorship)	by
desde	(all the way) from
por	because of, for
por (to indicate authorship)	by

Destination

a	to
hacia	toward
para (purpose or destination)	for

ORIGIN	Me encantan los poemas de Gabriela Mistral.	<i>I love the poems by Gabriela Mistral.</i>
DESTINATION	Salen para Francia mañana.	<i>They leave for France tomorrow.</i>

15.6 EJERCICIO

Traducción Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

Because of this cold (el resfriado), I can't go to the movies with my friends.

I'm reading a book by John Steinbeck.

This book is for you [pl., formal].

Greetings (all the way) from Cancún!

We're going to the mall (el centro comercial). Do you want to go with us?

These pearls (la perla) are from Japan.

All my friends from college (la universidad) are here.

What do they want from me?

I don't have anything for you.

1. He calls me all the way from Germany (Alemania) every week.

2. Because of her attitude (la actitud) and bitterness (la amargura), she has no friends.

3. The novel Les Misérables is by Victor Hugo.

4. We are marching (marchar) to Pretoria.

5. One of them is going to win (ganar) the grand prize (el premio gordo) !

6. I'm tired, and for this reason (razón) I'm going to take a nap (dormir una siesta).

Prepositions of time

Prepositions can be used to indicate a relationship in time, often answering the question *when?* Below are several frequently used prepositions that indicate time.

VOCABULARIO

a	to, until
antes de	before
desde	since
después de	after
durante	during
hasta	until
por	in

Me esperarán **hasta** mañana.

Después de comer, no es bueno dormir.

Lláname **antes de** las ocho.

*They'll wait for me **until** tomorrow.*

***After** eating, it's not good to fall asleep.*

*Call me **before** eight.*

15.7 EJERCICIO

Underline the correct preposition in parentheses to complete each of the following sentences.

Comemos el postre (*dessert*) (antes de | después de) la comida.

Hay muchos anuncios (*commercials*) (durante | por) el programa de televisión.

La temporada (*season*) de béisbol es de abril (desde | hasta) octubre.

(Antes de | Por) un partido de béisbol, cantamos el himno nacional.

Juan ha vivido (*has lived*) en California (por | desde) 1981.

Muchas personas trabajan de lunes (a | durante) viernes.

Tenemos que lavar los platos (antes de | después de) la cena.

No es cortés hablar (antes de | durante) la película.

Es importante limpiar la casa (durante | antes de) la fiesta.

1. Muchos consultorios (*offices*) de dentista tocan música (hasta | durante) el día.

2. El senador está en una reunión, pero va a regresar a la oficina (antes de | después de) estar allí.

3. Se pueden oír las noticias (por | hasta) las mañanas.

15.8 EJERCICIO

Traducción Use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.

You don't have to be here until tomorrow.

I need to clean the garage before winter.

It's cold, isn't it (¿no?) ? Yes. Since Tuesday.

Some people believe that ghosts (el fantasma) live after death (la muerte).

After dinner, we always wash the dishes.

What do you want to do during our break (el descanso) ?

What do you usually do in the afternoon?

What do you want to do before the dance (el baile) ?

We usually talk during the commercials (el anuncio).

1. He's going to work here until March.

.. Don't you have milk? No. Not since Saturday.

!. They work from Monday to Friday.

1. We can watch the movie and go to the restaurant after seeing it.

1. I always chop (picar) the onions before cooking them.

Prepositions and related adverbs

With many of the compound prepositions that end in **de** (**encima de**, **cerca de**, **lejos de**, etc.), especially if the object of the preposition is understood, you can drop the **de** in the Spanish sentence. These are most often prepositions indicating location. However, the lack of an object for the preposition converts that preposition into an adverb within the sentence. Both the preposition + object and

the adverb answer the question *where*?

La silla está **cerca de la mesa**.

*The chair is **close to the table**.*

La silla está **cerca**.

*The chair is **close**.*

Other prepositions indicating location or movement are very closely related to adverbs. The following chart shows six prepositions with related adverbs. The prepositions must be followed by a noun or pronoun as object of the preposition. The adverbs must be placed at the end of a clause or sentence and cannot be followed by a noun.

PREPOSITION		ADVERB	
adelante de	in front of	hacia adelante	forward
al lado de	next to	de lado	sideways
atrás de	behind	hacia atrás	backward
debajo de	below, under	abajo	downstairs, underneath
dentro de	inside	adentro	inside
fuera de	outside	afuera	outside

Ella está **adelante de Miguel** en la cola.

*She is **in front of Miguel** in line.*

Hay que ir **hacia adelante** en la autopista.

*You must go **forward** on the expressway.*

La silla está **al lado de la mesa**.

*The chair is **next to the table**.*

Un cangrejo camina **de lado**.

*A crab walks **sideways**.*

El acebo está **atrás de la casa**.

*The holly tree is **behind the house**.*

Cuando pones el coche en marcha atrás,
tú y el coche van **hacia atrás**.

*When you put the car in reverse, you and the
car go **backward**.*

Él está **debajo de la mesa**.

*He is **under the table**.*

Él está **abajo**.

*He is **downstairs**.*

Estamos **dentro de la casa**.

*We are **inside the house**.*

Estamos **adentro**.

*We are **inside**.*

Ellos están **fuera de la casa**.

*They are **outside the house**.*

Ellos están **afuera**.

*They are **outside**.*

16 Para and por

Students of Spanish quickly discover that the prepositions **para** and **por** are a force to be reckoned with. At first, we discover that they both mean “for.” However, upon closer inspection, we find out that each has several other meanings. Some of those meanings are shared by both prepositions, and others are unique to just one of them.

The issues encountered with **para** and **por** are sometimes compared with those of **ser** and **estar**, both of which translate as English “to be.” In the case of **ser** and **estar**, there is one verb in English that corresponds to two verbs in Spanish, each with a list of rules to absorb.

However, an important distinction between these two pairs of words is that **ser** and **estar**, in most grammatical instances, are not interchangeable. When a person makes an error using **ser** or **estar**, that error will register as a mistake in the mind of the listener (the bad news), but the listener will nearly always be able to “fix” the mistake in his or her mind and understand what the speaker intended (the good news).

Para and **por**, on the other hand, are grammatically interchangeable a good deal of the time. You can use one or the other, and you will produce a perfectly well-structured sentence (the good news). However, most listeners lack mind-reading skills, and they will therefore assume that you mean what you are actually saying, which is not always the case (the bad news).

Consider the following pair of sentences (their differences will be explained more clearly later in the chapter):

Luciano canta **para** Plácido. *Luciano sings for Plácido.*

Luciano canta **por** Plácido. *Luciano sings for Plácido.*

While both sentences translate as “Luciano sings *for* Plácido,” they have very different meanings. In the first sentence, Luciano is singing *to* Plácido: Luciano is on the stage, and Plácido is sitting happily in the audience listening to the music. In the second sentence, Luciano is singing *on behalf of* Plácido: Plácido is nowhere to be found, and Luciano takes his place. In this context, Luciano replaces Plácido.

In a nutshell, think of **para** as an arrow. In one way or another, **para** tells where something is going. **Por**, on the other hand, is like a balance scale, equalizing what is on both sides of the preposition.

Thus we must be extremely careful in using **para** and **por**. In this chapter,

we examine the various meanings of each one in turn: first **para**, then **por**. After working with them individually, we mix them up, as we do in everyday conversation. **Para** and **por**, even though they are just “little words,” provide a Spanish speaker with a rich way to describe various relationships of people and things.

Para

Para goes forward, like an arrow, away from its origin toward its destination, and usually in a direct, straight route.

The uses of **para** can be neatly placed into the following four categories: destination, purpose, deadline, and standard. In all four of these categories, which are discussed in detail below, **para** indicates distinguishing qualities of nouns in a sentence, often with movement toward a specific goal or destination.

Para: destination

Para indicates the destination of someone or something, whether that destination is real or figurative. **Para** tells where something is going, could go, or perhaps should go. In this context, **para** nearly always translates as English “for.”

To indicate real or figurative destination

REAL	Este jabón es para el baño.	<i>This soap is for the bathroom. (in the sense of “belongs in”)</i>
	Este teléfono es para esa oficina.	<i>This telephone is for that office. (in the sense of “goes into”)</i>
FIGURATIVE	Mi casa es buena para la fiesta.	<i>My house is good for the party.</i>
	Romeo es perfecto para Julieta.	<i>Romeo is perfect for Juliet.</i>

To express the recipient of an action

Para tells not only where, but also *to whom* something is going. The recipient always follows **para**, which translates as English “for” in this context.

Tengo el dinero para Juan.	<i>I have the money for John.</i>
Estos regalos son para mí.	<i>These gifts are for me.</i>

To indicate direction and/or final destination

Para concerns itself only with the final destination, not with any temporary stops along the way. (Contrast this with the use of **por** to indicate an intermediate destination.) In this context, **para** can translate as either English “to” or “for.”

Los astronautas van **para** la luna.
Salimos **para** la iglesia a las nueve.

*The astronauts go **to** the moon.
We leave **for** church at nine o'clock.*

To indicate an action's aim or objective, including profession

Para is used to indicate the final destination or objective of your studies—or what you want to be. For example, in universities in the United States, students often talk about their major. In Spanish, a student majoring in biology could say, **Estudio para médico**, which translates as “I’m studying *to be* a physician,” or simply, “I’m studying medicine.” The verb “to be” in this context is understood and therefore can be omitted. You can, if you want, include **ser** (“to be”), as in the sentence **Estudio para ser médico**. Note that with this usage, the profession usually remains singular in Spanish, even when the subject is plural, as in the second example below.

Ella estudia **para** electricista.
Ellos estudian **para** carpintero.

*She is studying **to be** an electrician.
They are studying **to be** carpenters.*

Para: purpose

To express purpose before an infinitive

Something's purpose is the reason that it exists. In describing what something does, or what it is for, use **para** + verb. Because a verb is never conjugated after a preposition, the format will always be **para** + infinitive. This use of **para** translates as English “for.”

Una pluma es **para** escribir.
Estos zapatos son **para** correr.

*A fountain pen is **for** writing.
These shoes are **for** jogging.*

To indicate purpose for doing something; “in order to” before an infinitive

To give the reason for doing something, use **para** + infinitive. In this case, **para** translates as English “to” or “in order to.”

Yo como **para** vivir.
Estudiamos **para** aprender.

*I eat **to** live.
We study **in order to** learn.*

Para: deadline

To express a specific time limit or deadline in the future

Use **para** to specify a time limit or deadline in the future, for example, to state by when you need a certain action to have been completed. In this context, **para**

usually translates as English “by”; however, it can also mean “for,” “on,” or “before.”

Tenemos que hacer esto **para** esta noche.
Necesita el vestido **para** el fin de semana.
Necesitamos el informe **para** el sábado.
Necesito la ropa **para** el jueves.

*We have to do this **by** tonight.*
*She needs the dress **for** the weekend.*
*We need the report **on** Saturday.*
*I need the clothes **before** Thursday.*

To express a limited time span in the future

Use **para** to express an action that stretches out over a specific period of time in the future. Typically, this is a generalized period of time, as opposed to a period that begins at a specific hour and then ends at a specific hour in the future. This use of **para** translates as English “for.”

Él tiene empleo **para** el verano.

*He has work **for** the summer.*

Tenemos una casa reservada **para** dos semanas.

*We have a house reserved **for** two weeks.*

Para: standard

To express a comparison to a certain standard

When comparing someone or something that goes beyond what is expected to what would typically be expected, use **para** to express that comparison. **Para** in these cases translates as English “for.”

Paco es alto **para** su edad.
Hace calor **para** enero.

*Paco is tall **for** his age.*
*It's warm **for** January.*

To express an opinion or personal standard

In order to say, “in my opinion,” you can say, literally, **en mi opinión**, or you can say more simply, **para mí**. This construction is used with both names and pronouns. In this context, **para** translates as English “for.”

Para mí, el español es hermoso.
Para Paco, Portland es la mejor ciudad.

***For me**, Spanish is beautiful.*
***For Paco**, Portland is the best city.*

Summary

The four categories of the uses of **para** are listed below. Use this list when doing the exercises that follow.

1. Destination

- a. To indicate real or figurative destination
- b. To express the recipient of an action
- c. To indicate direction and/or final destination
- d. To indicate an action's aim or objective, including profession
- 2. Purpose
- e. To express purpose before an infinitive
- f. To indicate purpose for doing something; "in order to" before an infinitive
- 3. Deadline
- g. To express a specific time limit or deadline in the future
- h. To express a limited time span in the future

4. Standard

- i. To express a comparison to a certain standard
- j. To express an opinion or personal standard

16.1 EJERCICIO

*Write the letter from the preceding summary list that corresponds to the reason for using **para** in each of the following sentences.*

- _____ 1. Tenemos que pagar los impuestos (*taxes*) para el 15 de abril.
- _____ 2. Santa Claus sólo tiene carbón para ella.
- _____ 3. Pongo la radio para escuchar la música.
- _____ 4. Vamos para Amsterdam este verano.
- _____ 5. Para Gregorio, un presidente debe ser diplomático.
- _____ 6. Para recibir buenas notas (*grades*), necesitas trabajar mucho.
- _____ 7. Camila toma clases para actriz.
- _____ 8. Este jabón es para el cuerpo y ése es para la cara.
- _____ 9. ¡Para un restaurante de cuatro estrellas, esta comida está horrible!
- _____ 10. Este papel es para envolver regalos.
- _____ 11. Para Abby, mirar una película es una buena manera de pasar la noche.
- _____ 12. Ellas estudian para bibliotecarias.
- _____ 13. Está muy nublado para un día de junio.

- _____ 14. Para mí, es muy bueno sacar fotos de ocasiones importantes.
- _____ 15. Tienes que hacer algo para tu novia en el día de San Valentín.
- _____ 16. Este detergente es para lavar la ropa.
- _____ 17. Tengo empleo para el año que viene.
- _____ 18. Salimos para la discoteca a la medianoche.
- _____ 19. Este espejo (*mirror*) es para la entrada de la casa.
- _____ 20. Ella es muy inteligente para una niña de sólo tres años.

16.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción *The words and expressions in **bold italic** translate as **para**. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.*

*This house is perfect**for** us.*

*We need a new table**for** the dining room.*

***For** some people, it isn't important to have a car.*

*These shoes are**for** dancing the tango.*

*You have to read this book**by** Thursday.*

*He watches television**to** avoid (evitar) his problems.*

*I'm leaving**for** Africa tomorrow.*

*I'm studying**to be** a magician (el mago).*

*He's very polite (cortés) **for** a teenager (el adolescente).*

*1. Can you write the letter**by** Tuesday?*

.. *This food is**for** the cat.*

!. ***For** him, winter is wonderful, but **for** me, summer is the best season (la estación).*

!. *She works a lot**in order to** get (sacar) good grades.*

!. *What time do you leave**for** work (el trabajo) ?*

!. *These apples are not**for** eating.*

Por

Like a balance scale, **por** is a great equalizer. The use of **por** indicates a sense of equality about whatever is on either side of **por** in a sentence. We trade one thing for another because items are perceived as equal in value. We say how long something lasts, equating the action of “lasting” with an amount of time. We substitute one person or thing for another, because we consider the two persons or items to be of equal value, at least temporarily.

The uses of **por** can be neatly placed into the following six categories: duration, substitution, motivation, movement, emotions, and idioms. In all six of these categories, which are discussed in detail below, **por** serves to equate or combine nouns in a sentence, rather than distinguish the differences between them.

Por: duration

To express duration of time

When expressing duration, that is, telling how long something lasts, use **por**. In this context, **por** translates as English “for.”

Cada día trabajamos **por** ocho horas. *Every day we work **for** eight hours.*
Ellos van de vacaciones **por** dos semanas. *They go on vacation **for** two weeks.*

To indicate periods of time during the 24-hour day

Por used before **la mañana, la tarde, la noche**, or **el día** indicates an unspecified amount of time, yet it implies that whatever is taking place lasts a while (as opposed to an extremely short time). In this context, **por** translates as English “for,” “at,” “during,” “on,” or “throughout.”

Va a Chicago por el día.	<i>He's going to Chicago for the day.</i>
Tenemos clase por la noche.	<i>We have class at night.</i>
Ella va a estudiar por la tarde.	<i>She's going to study during the afternoon.</i>
Ellos van al templo los viernes por la noche.	<i>They go to synagogue on Friday nights.</i>
Voy al dentista el lunes por la tarde.	<i>I'm going to the dentist on Monday afternoon.</i>
Él toma café por el día.	<i>He drinks coffee throughout the day.</i>

To express English use of Latin *per*

To express times per day, minutes per hour, or the percentage of something, use **por** to express the relationship. This use of **por** indicates duration or a portion of a whole, and it corresponds to the English use of Latin *per*.

Él lee tres libros por mes.	<i>He reads three books per month.</i>
El diez por ciento no aprobó el examen.	<i>Ten percent didn't pass the exam.</i>

Por: substitution or exchange

To indicate an equal exchange or trade

Por implies an equality of the two nouns that it separates. We freely trade or purchase something, because we perceive that what we are giving is equal in value to what we are getting in return. In this context, **por** usually translates as English “for.”

Pagué cinco dólares por la pizza.	<i>I paid five dollars for the pizza.</i>
Juan cambió su manzana por una naranja.	<i>Juan exchanged his apple for an orange.</i>

To express substitution (“on behalf of,” “in place of”)

Por indicates equality in a situation where someone or something is substituted for someone or something else. This is seen in the classroom, in the workplace, and in recipes—whenever the original person or ingredient is not available. In these cases, **por** usually translates as English “for,” “on behalf of,” or “in place of.”

Sustituyo margarina **por** mantequilla.
El vicepresidente habla **por** el presidente.

*I substitute margarine **for** butter.
The vice-president speaks **on behalf of** the
president.*

Roberto trabaja **por** Miguel.

*Roberto works **in place of** Miguel.*

To express thanks and gratitude

To thank someone for something that he or she has done for you, or to express gratitude for a gift, use **por**. This is another example of **por** as an equalizer. This is why we say that we give thanks *for* a kind deed: The thanks balance the act of giving. In this context, **por** usually translates as English “for.”

Gracias **por** las flores.
Te doy las gracias **por** tu ayuda.

*Thank you **for** the flowers.
I thank you **for** your help.*

Por: motivation

To indicate “because of” or having done something (por + infinitive)

To express the reason for having done something, use **por** + infinitive. This generally translates as “because of” or “due to.” The verb that follows **por** must be in the infinitive. Expressed in English, this verb is a gerund (which functions as a noun in the sentence), and it always ends in “-ing.”

Por ganar la lotería, ellos son ricos.
Él no trabaja hoy **por** estar enfermo.

***Due to** winning the lottery, they are rich.
He’s not working today **because of** his being sick.*

To express a motive for doing something

Por tells why a person does something by expressing a specific motive. In these cases, **por** can translate as either English “for” or “because of.”

Vamos a la tienda **por** mantequilla.
Reconstruimos la casa **por** la tormenta.

*We’re going to the store **for** butter.
We’re rebuilding the house **because of** the storm.*

To express a reason for something (por + noun or por + infinitive)

Por expresses the reason for something being the way it is; it expresses “why.” In these cases, **por** is followed by either a noun or an infinitive. The Spanish verb that follows **por**, when expressed in English, is a gerund (which functions as a noun in the sentence) that always ends in “-ing.” **Por** can translate as English “for,” “due to,” or “because of.”

Beethoven es famoso por su música.	<i>Beethoven is famous for his music.</i>
Soy más fuerte por tener la experiencia.	<i>I am stronger for having the experience.</i>
Beethoven es famoso por componer su música.	<i>Beethoven is famous for composing his music.</i>
Paco es popular por ser tan inteligente.	<i>Paco is popular for being so intelligent.</i>
Ella ahorra mucho dinero por los cupones.	<i>She saves a lot of money due to coupons.</i>
Ella ahorra mucho dinero por usar cupones.	<i>She saves a lot of money due to using coupons.</i>
Paco es popular por su personalidad.	<i>Paco is popular because of his personality.</i>
Soy más fuerte por la experiencia.	<i>I am stronger because of the experience.</i>

Por: movement

To express means of transportation

To express how someone gets somewhere, use **por** before the mode of transportation. Several common forms of transportation are listed here. This use of **por** translates as English “by” or “on.”

por autobús	<i>by bus</i>	por ferrocarril, por tren	<i>by rail, by train</i>
por avión	<i>by airplane</i>	por coche/carro	<i>by car</i>
Viajan de Londres a París por tren.			<i>They travel from London to Paris by train.</i>
Martín va al trabajo por autobús.			<i>Martin goes to work on the bus.</i>

NOTE The preposition **en** is also used in this way: **en avión**, **en tren**, etc.

To express means of sending messages or information

To talk about sending a message, use the preposition **por**. Several common ways of sending messages or information are listed here. In this context, **por** can translate as English “by,” “on,” or “via.”

por computadora	<i>by computer</i>	por e-mail	<i>by e-mail</i>
por correo	<i>by mail</i>	por fax	<i>by fax</i>
por correo electrónico	<i>by e-mail</i>	por teléfono	<i>by phone, on the telephone</i>
Le envío un regalo por correo.			<i>I'm sending him a gift by mail.</i>
No es bueno discutir por teléfono.			<i>It's not good to fight on the telephone.</i>
Me responde por e-mail.			<i>He responds to me via e-mail.</i>

To indicate the point of an intermediate destination

To indicate an intermediate destination or a temporary stop, use **por**—for example, a stop by someone’s house or a layover that’s part of a longer trip. Any temporary stop that is not your final destination is indicated by using **por**. (Contrast this with the use of **para** to indicate final destination.) In this context, **por** translates as English “by” or “through.”

Voy **por** el banco antes de ir al teatro.
Pasamos **por** Detroit en el viaje a París.

*I'm going **by** the bank before going to the theater.
We're going **through** Detroit on the trip to Paris.*

To indicate movement in an area

While **para** indicates movement to or toward a destination, **por** indicates that the person is already there and is moving around in a general, nonspecific direction. In such cases, **por** can translate as English “around,” “through,” “throughout,” or “by.”

Nos paseamos **por** la ciudad.
Nos paseamos **por** el parque.
El detective busca **por** la casa.
Marta anda **por** la tienda.

*We walk **around** the city.
We stroll **through** the park.
The detective searches **throughout** the house.
Marta walks **by** the store.*

Por: emotions

To express a like (or dislike) or an emotion for someone or something

To express having or feeling something that is intangible—such as respect—for someone, use **por**. This contrasts with using **para** to express destination for something tangible, such as a book.

Think of it like this: When you give something tangible away, you are left with nothing; your hand is empty. But you cannot give away emotions, because no matter how much love you give to someone, you will still be filled with love. Something that’s intangible just gets moved around. In this context, **por** nearly always translates as English “for.”

Juan tiene mucho amor **por** su esposa.
Tengo respeto **por** mis amigos.

*John has a lot of love **for** his wife.
I have respect **for** my friends.*

Por: idioms

To appear in idiomatic expressions

Por is used in hundreds of idiomatic expressions. In a dictionary of Spanish idiomatic usage, several pages of phrases begin with **por**. Below are several of the more frequently used idiomatic expressions that begin with **por**.

VOCABULARIO

por allí	around there, that way
por aquí	around here, this way
por ejemplo	for example
por eso	therefore
por esto	therefore
por favor	as a favor, please
por fin	at last, finally
por (lo) general	as a rule, generally
por lo menos	at least
por medio de	by means of
por primera vez	for the first time
por separado	separately
por supuesto	of course
por todas partes	everywhere
por todos lados	all over, everywhere, on all sides

Summary

The six categories of the uses of **por** are listed below. Use this list when doing the exercises that follow.

1. Duration

- a. To express duration of time
- b. To indicate periods of time during the 24-hour day
- c. To express English use of Latin *per*

2. Substitution or exchange

- d. To indicate an equal exchange or trade
- e. To express substitution (“on behalf of,” “in place of”)
- f. To express thanks and gratitude

3. Motivation

- g. To indicate “because of” or having done something (**por** + infinitive)
- h. To express a motive for doing something
- i. To express a reason for something (**por** + noun or **por** + infinitive)
- 4. Movement
- j. To express means of transportation

k. To express means of sending messages or information **l.** To indicate the point of an intermediate destination **m.** To indicate movement in an area

5. Emotions

n. To express a like (or dislike) or an emotion for someone or something **6.** Idioms

o. To appear in idiomatic expressions

16.3 EJERCICIO

*Write the letter from the preceding summary list that corresponds to the reason for using **por** in each of the following sentences.*

- _____ 1. Ella corre por media hora cada día.
- _____ 2. Vamos a Amsterdam por avión.
- _____ 3. Caminamos por el centro comercial, pero no compramos nada.
- _____ 4. Pagamos cien dólares por la silla.
- _____ 5. El coche va a sesenta millas por hora.
- _____ 6. La policía buscó por todas partes sin encontrar al ladrón (thief).
- _____ 7. No tengo ningún sentimiento por ti.
- _____ 8. Ella siempre duerme una siesta por la tarde.
- _____ 9. Gracias por las manzanas.
- _____ 10. Él siempre recibe una “A” por estudiar mucho.
- _____ 11. Tengo laringitis. Tienes que hablar por mí.
- _____ 12. Voy por tu casa antes de ir al cine.
- _____ 13. La casa fue destruida por el terremoto.
- _____ 14. Voy al centro comercial por un vestido.
- _____ 15. Vamos al teatro el sábado por la noche.
- _____ 16. No quiero pagar más de diez dólares por una libra de café.
- _____ 17. Ellos siempre compran la comida por separado.
- _____ 18. Manejamos por la ciudad en busca del restaurante perfecto.
- _____ 19. Puedes enviarme la información por correo electrónico.
- _____ 20. Nadie trabaja por mí cuando estoy enfermo.

- _____ 21. ¿Cuál es la razón por la que envías estas flores?
- _____ 22. Ellos prefieren viajar por ferrocarril.
- _____ 23. Montaigne es conocido por sus ensayos (*essays*).
- _____ 24. Te doy muchas gracias por tu bondad (*kindness*).
- _____ 25. Por comprar tantas cosas, ella está sin plata (*broke*).

16.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following sentences into Spanish. The word or phrase to be replaced by **por** or an idiomatic expression with **por** appears in **bold italic**. Unless otherwise indicated, use the second-person singular Spanish form for English you.*

*We go to school **by** bus.*

*You can have those shoes **for** ten dollars.*

*He has **at least** twenty cats.*

*When I travel, I always walk **through** the city and I investigate (*investigar*) everything.*

*We read the newspaper **for** thirty minutes every morning.*

*Juanita is sick today. Can you work **for** her?*

*I'm going to the supermarket **for** milk, butter, and eggs.*

***Every Monday night** he watches football (*el fútbol americano*) on television.*

***Because of** her allergies (*las alergias*), she can't touch the cat.*

*I. Thanks **for** nothing.*

.. **For** giving so much (tanto) to others, she deserves (merecer) a medal (la medalla).

.. Ninet**per** cent of all the dentists say that this toothpaste (la pasta de dientes) is horrible.

.. He comes**by** my house now and then (de vez en cuando).

.. I only have admiration (la estimación) **for** you.

.. I now understand the differences between por and para **for** the first time.

.. You can send me the contracts (el contrato) **by** fax.

16.5 EJERCICIO

Complete each sentence with the appropriate use of **para** or **por**. Then give the reason for your choice.

Tengo algunas cosas_____ ti.

Juan es muy humilde (*modest*)_____ un hombre tan inteligente y rico.

Gracias_____ los mapas. Puedo usarlos en mi viaje a España.

Cada día Mitch practica el clarinete_____ una hora.

Cuando visito un museo, siempre camino_____ todas las galerías.

El concierto comienza a las ocho. Quiero llegar al teatro_____ las siete y media.

Los juguetes de Mattel son _____ niños.

Yo tomo café_____ la mañana y_____ la tarde, pero nunca_____ la noche.

Estas toallas (*towels*) son_____ el baño principal.

l. Batman y Robin siempre viajan_____ Batmobile, y nunca_____ autobús.

.. Este restaurante es demasiado costoso. ¡Veinte dólares una_____ ensalada es ridículo!

!. ¿Estás listo (*ready*)? Salimos_____ la biblioteca ahora.

l. Tengo hambre. ¿Hay un restaurante_____ aquí?

l. No hay clases hoy y nada está abierto_____ la nieve.

l. Me abono (*subscribe*) a dos periódicos_____ saber las noticias del mundo.

l. Cuando la actriz principal está enferma, su suplente (*understudy*) se presenta_____ ella.

l. Me cepillo los dientes más o menos cinco veces_____ día.

l. El dentista cree que debemos cepillarnos los dientes lo_____ menos dos veces al día.

l. Martín cree que el sistema métrico es el mejor, pero_____ mí, prefiero pies y pulgadas.

1. Antes de la fiesta, vamos _____ la tienda a comprar unos refrescos.

2. Siento nada menos que (*nothing but*) disgusto _____ ellos.

3. Uso e-mail _____ escribir notas a mis colegas.

4. No tenemos ni luces ni electricidad _____ no pagar la cuenta de utilidades a tiempo.

5. John Phillips Sousa es famoso _____ sus marchas.

6. Cada día hablo con mi esposo _____ teléfono.

7. Después de veinte años, _____ fin Carlota ganó la lotería.

8. Comemos _____ vivir.

9. Vamos a tener una fiesta el sábado _____ la noche.

10. Solamente el treinta _____ ciento de los médicos recomiendan esta medicina.

11. Ustedes tienen que terminar el proyecto _____ finales del mes.

16.6 EJERCICIO

*The following eight pairs of sentences differ either very little or not at all, except in the use of **para** and **por**. Translate each sentence into English, and then describe its meaning based on the use of **para** or **por**.*

a. Puedes tener mi camisa para tu falda.

b. Puedes tener mi camisa por tu falda.

a. Vamos para su casa esta noche.

b. Vamos por su casa esta noche.

a. Tengo muchas muestras (*samples*) de champú y jabón para el viaje.

b. Tengo muchas muestras de champú y jabón por el viaje.

a. Martín y Dorotea tienen muchos regalos para Daisy y para Lily.

b. Martín y Dorotea tienen mucho amor por Daisy y por Lily.

a. Judith baila para Twyla.

b. Judith baila por Twyla.

a. Conducimos para el parque.

b. Conducimos por el parque.

a. Estas cremas son para las alergias.

b. Estas alergias son por las cremas.

a. Para mí, esta sopa está mala.

b. Por mí, esta sopa está mala.

16.7 EJERCICIO

Traducción

VOCABULARIO	adicional	extra
	el billete	ticket
	la compañía	company
	la edad	age
	escoger	to choose
	la fecha	date
	ganar	to win
	la gasolina	gasoline
	la historia	story
	la lotería	lottery
	mil millones	billion
	el número	number
	sin embargo	however
	suficiente	enough

This is a story for everyone. There is a woman who lives in Texas. She works for a large company, but she works for very little money. She needs more money for food and clothing. Every Friday afternoon, when she buys gasoline, she pays two dollars extra for lottery tickets. She chooses the lottery numbers for ages of friends and for special dates. This week, for the first time, she wins.

She wins a billion dollars. It is enough money to buy everything that she wants. First, she buys gifts for all her friends. Of course, they tell her, “Thank you for these gifts.” Normally, she doesn’t pay more than fifty dollars for a dress; however, for winning the lottery, tomorrow she is going to Paris in order to buy a dress for fifty thousand dollars. Are you happy for her?

17 Prepositions and verbs

The relationship between prepositions and verbs is a special one. In some cases, the preposition exists within the definition of the verb itself. In other cases, the meaning of the verb depends on the preposition that follows it. In this chapter, your vocabulary will expand significantly as you explore the intricate relationship that often exists between prepositions and verbs.

Verbs whose meanings include a preposition

There are many Spanish verbs whose definitions in English include a preposition. It is important to know these verbs in order to resist the temptation to add a preposition in Spanish when none is needed or adding one is grammatically incorrect.

Busco mis zapatos.	<i>I'm looking for my shoes.</i>
Miras las pinturas.	<i>You look at the paintings.</i>
El plato huyó con la cuchara.	<i>The dish ran away with the spoon.</i>
Los trapos empapan el aceite.	<i>The rags soak up the oil.</i>
El jardinero arranca la maleza.	<i>The gardener pulls out the weeds.</i>
Escuchamos música.	<i>We listen to music.</i>
Encendemos las luces.	<i>We turn on the lights.</i>
Apagamos las luces.	<i>We turn off the lights. OR</i> <i>We turn out the lights.</i>

Below are frequently used Spanish verbs whose definitions in English include a preposition. The understood preposition is *italicized* in the definition.

VOCABULARIO

agradecer	to be grateful/thankful <i>for</i>
anhelar	to yearn/long <i>to</i>
apagar	to turn <i>off</i>
aprobar (o > ue)	to approve <i>of</i>
arrancar	to root <i>up</i> , to pull <i>out</i> , to turn <i>on</i> (an engine)
atravesar (e > ie)	to go/run <i>through</i> , to go <i>across</i>
averiguar	to find <i>out</i>
bajar	to go <i>down</i>
borrar	to cross <i>out</i>
botar	to throw <i>away</i> , to toss <i>out</i>
buscar	to look <i>for</i>
caerse	to fall <i>down</i>
calentar (e > ie)	to heat/warm <i>up</i>
colgar (o > ue)	to hang <i>up</i>
conocer	to be acquainted <i>with</i>
cortar	to cut <i>off</i> , to cut <i>out</i>
criar	to bring <i>up</i> (as “to rear”)
derribar	to knock <i>down</i> , to tear <i>down</i>
destacar	to stand <i>out</i>

elegir (e > i)	to elect/choose <i>to</i>
empapar	to soak/sponge <i>up</i>
encender (e > ie)	to turn <i>on</i> (lights)
enseñar	to point <i>out</i>
entregar	to hand <i>over</i>
envolver (o > ue)	to wrap <i>up</i>
escuchar	to listen <i>to</i>
esperar	to wait <i>for</i> , to hope <i>for</i>
huir	to run <i>away</i> , to flee <i>from</i>
ignorar	to be ignorant/unaware <i>of</i>
indicar	to point <i>out</i>
llevar	to carry/take <i>away</i>
lograr	to succeed <i>in</i> , to manage <i>to</i>
merecer	to deserve <i>to</i>
mirar	to look <i>at</i>
organizar	to set <i>up</i>
pagar	to pay <i>for</i>
pedir (e > i)	to ask <i>for</i>
pisar	to step <i>on</i>
platicar	to talk <i>over</i>
poder (o > ue)	to be able <i>to</i>

poner	to turn <i>on</i> (an appliance)
preferir	to prefer <i>to</i>
pretender	to seek/aspire <i>to</i> , to claim <i>to</i>
quitar	to take <i>off</i>
recoger	to pick <i>up</i>
rogar (o > ue)	to beg <i>for</i> , to pray <i>for</i>
saber	to know how <i>to</i> (do something)
sacar	to take <i>out</i>
salir	to go <i>out</i> (of a place, on a date)
señalar	to point <i>out</i>
separar	to set <i>apart</i>
soler (o > ue)	to be accustomed <i>to</i> , to be in the habit <i>of</i>
soplar	to blow <i>out</i>
subir	to go <i>up</i> , to come <i>up</i> , to get <i>on</i> (a train, bus, etc.)
tachar	to cross <i>out</i>
tender (e > ie)	to hang <i>out</i> (laundry), to spread <i>out</i>
yacer	to lie <i>down</i>

NOTE Some of these verbs have additional definitions that do not include a preposition in English.

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. Usualmente, yo como en un restaurante, pero a veces llevo la comida.
- _____ 2. Antes de preparar la carne, siempre quito la grasa (*fat*).
- _____ 3. Vanna White señala las letras en el popular programa *La Rueda de la Fortuna*.
- _____ 4. Cada sábado por la noche yo salgo con otra estrella de cine.
- _____ 5. El trabajo del detective con frecuencia es averiguar quién es el asesino (*murderer*).
- _____ 6. El gallo atraviesa la calle para llegar al otro lado.
- _____ 7. Me encanta soplar las velitas (*candles*) en la torta (*cake*) de cumpleaños.
- _____ 8. Cada día quito el polvo (*dust*) en mi casa o apartamento.
- _____ 9. Yo sé bailar el merengue.
- _____ 10. Yo merezco ganar la lotería.
- _____ 11. Cuelgo el teléfono cuando me llama un vendedor a quien no conozco.

_____ 12. Las personas que vuelan en primera clase suben antes que los pasajeros en la clase turista.

_____ 13. Siempre pongo la radio cuando conduzco (*drive*) largas distancias.

_____ 14. Yo suelo estudiar por la noche y trabajar por el día.

_____ 15. Apago las luces cuando miro la televisión.

_____ 16. Mozart destaca por su música.

17.1 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the list of verbs on pages 149–150.*

I am grateful for everything.

_____ *What are you looking for? I'm looking for my glasses (los anteojos).*

_____ *Where should we hang up our coats (el abrigo) ?*

_____ *I like to listen to classical music (la música clásica).*

_____ *You can turn off the lights because we're going to bed now.*

_____ *The babysitter (la niñera) picks up the toys (el juguete).*

_____ *He crosses out all his mistakes (el error).*

_____ *Tonight Carlota is going to go out with Guillermo. She is very excited (ilusionado).*

_____ *I always take out the garbage (la basura). You should take out the garbage once in a while (de vez en cuando).*

_____ *The lawyer hands over the evidence (la evidencia) to the judge (el juez).*

.. *The rags (el trapo) soak up the oil (el aceite).*

!. *The mail carrier (el cartero) always steps on my roses.*

j. *I need more money. I'm going to ask for a raise (el aumento) tomorrow.*

k. *How long (¿Por cuánto tiempo?) do we have to wait for the bus?*

i. *You can turn on the lights here and turn off the lights over there (allá).*

Verbs that follow prepositions

When a verb immediately follows a preposition, it always remains in the infinitive form. There is no exception to this rule. Usually the English translation of the infinitive will be in the gerund, or “-ing” form. However, at times the verb may translate as the infinitive in English as well.

Antes de comer, me lavo las manos.

Después de comer, lavo los platos.

En vez de estudiar, voy a dormir.

Además de andar, puedo masticar chicle.

Pienso en conseguir un gato.

Para recibir una “A,” necesitas trabajar duro.

Before eating, I wash my hands.

After eating, I wash the dishes.

Instead of studying, I'm going to sleep.

In addition to walking, I can chew gum.

I am thinking of getting a cat.

In order to receive an “A,” you need to work hard.

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

_____ 1. Además de tocar la guitarra, Bruce Springsteen también canta.

_____ 2. Antes de comprar un libro, normalmente leo uno o dos capítulos en la librería.

_____ 3. A veces, en vez de cepillarme los dientes, mastico chicle.

_____ 4. Después de ganar las elecciones, el nuevo presidente cumple (keeps) las promesas.

_____ 5. Además de tomar esta clase de español, tomo por lo menos

(*at least*) dos clases adicionales.

_____ 6. Para mantener un coche, se necesita cambiar el aceite cada tres meses.

_____ 7. Después de ganar la Serie Mundial, los jugadores van directamente a Disney World.

_____ 8. Pienso en comprar un coche nuevo.

_____ 9. Normalmente me ducho antes de acostarme.

_____ 10. Pienso en renunciar a (*quitting*) mi trabajo.

_____ 11. Para estar a la moda, es necesario gastar (*spend*) muchísimo dinero por la ropa.

_____ 12. Este año, en lugar de cortar (*mow*) el césped (*lawn*), voy a comprar una cabra (*goat*).

17.2 EJERCICIO

Traducción

We're going to drive to Vermont instead of flying.

Before buying the eggs, you should look inside the carton (el cartón).

I always feel better after exercising (hacer ejercicio).

Besides being able to fly, Superman can see through (a través de) walls (la pared).

I'm thinking about writing a novel.

In order to get (llegar) to the bank, you should turn (doblar) right on Park Avenue.

Do you want to swim instead of playing golf?

She always eats ten tacos after swimming.

What do you have to do before leaving?

¡. I'm going to a lecture (la conferencia) about using computers.

.. In addition to boiling (hervir) water, this stove (la estufa) can boil milk!

!.. John has to take three more (otras tres) classes in order to graduate (graduarse).

Verbs that require a preposition

Many Spanish verbs require a preposition before the following word for a specific usage. That word is typically a noun or the infinitive form of another verb. For the most part, these verbs and their respective prepositions must be learned as one would learn other vocabulary words.

Below are several of these verbs, grouped by preposition and arranged alphabetically within groups. Following each verb + preposition is the abbreviation for the part of speech that usually follows the verb in this usage, the verb's English equivalent, and an indicator of the usage itself. For example, the entry "**cuidar a** (*n.*), to take care of (someone)" could be illustrated by this example: **Yo cuido a Juan** ("I take care of Juan"). The entry, "**acabar de** (*v.*), to have just (done something)," gives you enough information to write **María acaba de escribir una carta** ("María has just written a letter").

NOTE In the entries for verbs listed under **a**, remember that the **a** following these verbs is a preposition. Be careful not to confuse the preposition **a** with the personal **a** (which is placed after verbs when the stated direct object is a person).

Abbreviations include (*v.*) for *verb* and (*n.*) for *noun*.

a

Verbs that are followed by **a** are often referred to as "springboard verbs" because they mark the beginning of an action. As you look through the following list of verbs, you will find that many of them move toward an action or lead a person ahead, either literally or figuratively.

Remember that the preposition **a** means "to," and that when you go to something, you are moving ahead, going forward.

acertar a (v.)	to manage to (<i>do something</i>), to succeed in (<i>doing something</i>)
acostumbrarse a (n./v.)	to become used to (<i>someone/something</i>), to become used to (<i>doing something</i>)
adaptarse a (n./v.)	to adapt oneself to (<i>something [a situation] / doing something</i>)
adelantarse a (n./v.)	to step forward to (<i>someone/something / doing something</i>)
animar a (v.)	to encourage to (<i>do something</i>)
animarse a (v.)	to decide to (<i>do something</i>), to make up one's mind to (<i>do something</i>)
aprender a (v.)	to learn to (<i>do something</i>)
apresurarse a (n./v.)	to hasten to (<i>somewhere / do something</i>), to hurry to (<i>somewhere / do something</i>)
arriesgarse a (v.)	to risk (<i>doing something</i>)
asistir a (n.)	to attend (<i>something [a function]</i>)
asomarse a (n.)	to appear at (<i>something</i>), to look out from (<i>something</i>)
aspirar a (v.)	to aspire to (<i>do something / be someone</i>)
atreverse a (v.)	to dare to (<i>do something</i>)
aventurarse a (v.)	to venture to (<i>do something</i>)
ayudar a (v.)	to help to (<i>do something</i>), to aid in (<i>doing something</i>)
burlar a (n.)	to deceive (<i>someone</i>), to play a trick on (<i>someone</i>)
comenzar a (v.)	to begin to (<i>do something</i>)
comprometerse a (v.)	to make a commitment to (<i>do something</i>)
condenar a (v.)	to condemn to (<i>do something</i>)
consagrarse a (n.)	to devote oneself to (<i>someone/something</i>)
contribuir a (n./v.)	to contribute to (<i>something / doing something</i>)
convidar a (n./v.)	to invite to (<i>something [a function] / do something</i>)
correr a (n./v.)	to run to (<i>somewhere / do something</i>)
cuidar a (n.)	to care for (<i>someone [a person, a pet]</i>), to take care of (<i>someone [a person, a pet]</i>)
dar a (n.)	to face (<i>something</i>)
dar cuerda a (n.)	to wind (<i>something [a watch]</i>)
decidirse a (v.)	to decide to (<i>do something</i>)
dirigirse a (n./v.)	to go to (<i>somewhere</i>), to address (<i>someone</i>), to direct oneself to (<i>doing something</i>)
disponerse a (v.)	to prepare to (<i>do something</i>), to be disposed to (<i>do something</i>)
empezar a (v.)	to begin to (<i>do something</i>)
enseñar a (v.)	to teach to (<i>do something</i>)
forzar a (v.)	to force to (<i>do something</i>)
impulsar a (v.)	to impel to (<i>do something</i>)
incitar a (v.)	to incite to (<i>do something</i>)
inducir a (v.)	to induce to (<i>do something</i>)
inspirar a (v.)	to inspire to (<i>do something</i>)
instar a (v.)	to urge to (<i>do something</i>)
invitar a (v.)	to invite to (<i>do something</i>)

ir a (n./v.)	to go to (somewhere), to be going to (do something)
limitarse a (v.)	to limit oneself to (doing something)
llegar a (n./v.)	to arrive at (somewhere) / to be going to (do something)
meterse a (v.)	to take up (doing something)
montar a (n.)	to ride (something [a horse])
negarse a (v.)	to refuse to (do something)
obligar a (v.)	to oblige to (do something), to force to (do something)
ofrecerse a (v.)	to offer to (do something), to promise to (do something), to volunteer to (do something)
oler a (n.)	to smell like (something)
oponerse a (n./v.)	to oppose (something / doing something), to be in opposition to (something / doing something)
pararse a (v.)	to stop to (do something)
parecerse a (n.)	to resemble (someone/something)
pasar a (n./v.)	to pass to (something / doing something), to proceed to (something / doing something)
persuadir a (v.)	to persuade to (do something)
ponerse a (v.)	to begin to (do something), to set out to (do something)
prestarse a (v.)	to lend oneself to (doing something)
probar a (v.)	to try to (do something), to attempt to (do something)
quedarse a (v.)	to stay to (do something), to remain to (do something)
rebajarse a (n./v.)	to stoop to (something [a situation] / doing something)
reducirse a (n./v.)	to reduce a situation or oneself to (something / doing something)
rehusar a (v.)	to refuse to (do something)
renunciar a (n.)	to renounce (something), to give up (something), to quit (something [a job])
resignarse a (n./v.)	to resign oneself to (something / doing something)
resistir a (n./v.)	to resist (something / doing something)
resolverse a (v.)	to make up one's mind to (do something), to resolve to (do something)
retirarse a (n./v.)	to retire to (somewhere / do something)
romper a (v.)	to start suddenly to (do something)
saber a (n.)	to taste like (something)
sentarse a (n./v.)	to sit down to (something / do something)
someterse a (n./v.)	to submit oneself to (something / doing something)
sonar a (n.)	to sound like (something)
subir a (n.)	to go up to (something), to climb (something), to get on (something)
venir a (n./v.)	to come to (somewhere / do something)
volver a (n./v.)	to return to (somewhere), to (do something) again

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. Doy cuerda a mi reloj cada día.
- _____ 2. Me niego a volar cuando está lloviendo.
- _____ 3. Yo creo que el pavo sabe a pollo.
- _____ 4. Nadie puede forzarme a hacer nada.
- _____ 5. Siempre rompo a llorar en una boda.
- _____ 6. Quiero renunciar a mi trabajo.

- _____ 7. Después de sentarme a comer, rehúso a contestar el teléfono.
- _____ 8. Nunca me rebajo a robar dulces de un niño.
- _____ 9. Nadie puede persuadirme a comer una carpa dorada (*goldfish*), ni por un millón de dólares.
- _____ 10. Me parezco a uno de mis primos.
- _____ 11. Peter Jennings se parece a James Bond.
- _____ 12. A veces el ronroneo (*purring*) de un gato suena a un barco de motor.
- _____ 13. La memoria de la madre Teresa me inspira a ser una mejor persona.
- _____ 14. Mi casa da al este.
- _____ 15. Cuando subo a mi coche, me pongo el cinturón de seguridad inmediatamente.

17.3 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the preceding list of verbs that require a.*

This sounds like a lie to me.

She bursts out crying (llorar) every time she remembers the pain (el dolor) of her childhood (la niñez).

He's going to quit his job, because his company (la compañía) is going to begin to downsize (recortar el personal).

Sooner or later (tarde o temprano), you have to resign yourself to the fact (el hecho de) that some people are not honest (honrado).

You can't force us to do anything that we don't want to do.

Benjamín winds his watch every day at nine o'clock in the morning.

Mrs. Dalí encourages her children to study the fine arts (las bellas artes).

In this house, we sit down to eat dinner (cenar) at seven o'clock sharp (en punto).

What time do we get on the train?

l. This frog tastes like a toad (el sapo).

. Mateo says that snake meat (la carne de culebra) tastes like chicken.

l. Oscar Wilde says that he can resist everything but (salvo) temptation (la tentación).

l. In this section of the book, we learn how to use verbs that take (tomar) the preposition a.

l. Some athletes (el atleta) become used to receiving and spending (gastar) lots of money.

l. Richard is not disposed to giving us anything today. He is not in the mood (de humor).

con

Verbs that require the preposition **con** sometimes clearly have the meaning “with,” as in **asociarse con**, which means “to associate with.” For other verbs, it takes deciphering the real meaning of the verb to understand more clearly why it takes **con**.

For example, the verb **casarse con**, which means “to marry,” has as its root the noun **la casa** (“house”). The verb **casarse con** actually means “to set up a house for oneself with (someone).” Another frequently used verb, **encontrarse con** (“to run into,” “to meet up with”), means literally, “to find oneself with.”

aburrirse con (n.)	to be bored with (someone/something), to get bored with (someone/something)
acabar con (n.)	to finish with/off (someone/something), to get rid of (someone/something)
amenazar con (n./v.)	to threaten with (something / doing something)
asociarse con (n.)	to associate with (someone), to team up with (someone)
asustarse con (n.)	to be afraid of (someone/something), to be frightened by (someone/something)
bastarle a alguien con (n./v.)	to have enough of (something / doing something)
casarse con (n.)	to marry (someone)
comerciar con (n.)	to trade with (someone / something [a business]), to trade in (something [a business])
conformarse con (n./v.)	conform to (something / doing something), to resign oneself to (something / doing something), to make do with (something / doing something)
contar con (n.)	to count on (someone/something)
contentarse con (n.)	to content oneself with (something)
dar con (n.)	to come upon (someone/something)
disfrutar con (n.)	to enjoy (someone/something)
divertirse con (n.)	to enjoy (someone/something), to have fun with (someone/something), to have a good time with (someone/something)
encontrarse con (n.)	to meet up with (someone), to run into (someone)
enfadarse con (n.)	to get angry at/with (someone/something)
enojarse con (n.)	to get angry at/with (someone/something)
equivocarse con (n.)	to make a mistake about (someone/something), to be mistaken about (someone/something)
espantarse con (n.)	to become afraid of (someone/something)
juntarse con (n.)	to associate with (someone), to join with (someone)
limpiar con (n.)	to clean with (something)
llenar con (n.)	to fill with (something)
meterse con (n.)	to bother (someone/something), to pick a fight with (someone/something)
preocuparse con (n.)	to worry about (someone/something)
recrearse con (n.)	to amuse oneself with (something)
romper con (n.)	to break up with (someone), to break off relations with (someone)
salir con (n.)	to go out with (someone), date (someone)
soñar con (n./v.)	to dream of/about (someone/something / doing something)
tratar con (n.)	to associate with (someone), to have dealings with (someone/something)
tropezarse con (n.)	to bump into (someone/something), to stumble over (something)

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. A veces me encuentro con amigos para tomar un café.
- _____ 2. Disfruto mucho con los discos de Lady Gaga.
- _____ 3. Un día quiero casarme con alguien de Hollywood.

- _____ 4. Me enojo con personas que no me dicen la verdad.
- _____ 5. Cuando una persona me miente, generalmente rompo con él o con ella.
- _____ 6. Por las mañanas me basta con tomar café.
- _____ 7. Sueño con ser una estrella de cine algún día.
- _____ 8. Siempre puedo contar con mi mejor amigo/amiga.
- _____ 9. Me junto con muchos músicos.
- _____ 10. No me asocio con vendedores de drogas ni de pistolas.
- _____ 11. Me aburro con la mayoría de los programas en la televisión.
- _____ 12. Cuando no hay luces, a veces me tropiezo con el sofá.
- _____ 13. Cuando estoy enojado/enojada, amenazo con matar a alguien.
- _____ 14. Muchas compañías de los Estados Unidos comercian con Japón.
- _____ 15. Siempre me conformo con pagar los impuestos sin quejarme.

17.4 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the preceding list of verbs that require **con**.*

You can count on me, but can I count on you?

Every Wednesday, I meet up with Kay (in order) to eat dinner (cenar) and to converse.

In the movie Spiderman, Peter Parker (Spiderman) dates Mary Jane Watson.

I become afraid of the dark (la oscuridad) during a storm (la tormenta).

It's tragic, but sometimes (a veces) a person needs to break off relations with his/her family.

The egomaniac (el egoísta) dreams of being famous, popular, and rich.

I don't associate with companies that sell tobacco (el tabaco).

Now and then (de vez en cuando) I am mistaken about people (la persona).

We always have a good time with our neighbors (el vecino).

l. She gets angry at me when I am late (llegar tarde).

. José has no dealings with his wife's family.

!. If you clean the bathtub (la bañera) with Brillo, you're going to damage (dañar) it.

l. Now and then I come upon someone who truly (verdaderamente) inspires (inspirar) me.

l. If Juan isn't careful (no tener cuidado), he's going to bump into the wall.

i. On Sunday mornings, I often content myself with orange juice and the newspaper.

de

Verbs that are followed by **de** are often verbs of cessation or withdrawal. This is seen clearly in **terminar de** + verb, which means “to finish (doing something).” The concept of something ending is seen frequently in an examination of the list of verbs below.

The preposition **de** also follows many verbs of emotion. **Aburrirse de** (“to be bored by/with”), **cansarse de** (“to be/get tired of”), **sorprenderse de** (“to be surprised at”) are a few examples of verbs of emotion that take **de**.

aburrirse de (n./v.)	to be bored by/with (someone/something / doing something)
abusar de (n.)	to take advantage of (someone/something), to impose upon (someone/something), to abuse (someone/something)
acabar de (v.)	to have just (done something)
acordarse de (n./v.)	to remember (someone/something), to remember to (do something)
alegrarse de (n./v.)	to be glad of/about (something), to be happy to (do something)
alejarse de (n.)	to go/get away from (someone/something/somewhere)
aprovecharse de (n./v.)	to take advantage of (someone/something / doing something)
arrepentirse de (n./v.)	to repent for (something / doing something), to be sorry for (something / doing something)
asombrarse de (n.)	to be astonished at (something)
avergonzarse de (n.)	to be ashamed of (someone/something)
brindar a la salud de (n.)	to toast (someone)
burlarse de (n.)	to make fun of (someone/something)
cansarse de (n./v.)	to be/get tired of (someone/something / doing something)
carecer de (n./v.)	to lack (something)
cesar de (v.)	to cease (doing something)
conseguir algo de (n.)	to obtain/get something from (someone/something)
cuidar de (n.)	to care for (something), to take care of (something)
deber de (v.)	to suppose [conjecture] to be (someone/something), "must be" (someone/something)
dejar de (v.)	to stop (doing something)
depender de (n./v.)	to depend on (someone/something / doing something)
encargarse de (n./v.)	to take charge of (someone/something / doing something)
estar encargado de (n./v.)	to be in charge of (someone/something / doing something)
gozar de (n.)	to enjoy (something)
haber de (v.)	to suppose [conjecture] to (be/do something)
hablar de (n./v.)	to talk of/about (someone/something / doing something), to speak of (someone/something / doing something)
jactarse de (n./v.)	to brag about (something / doing something), to boast of (something / doing something)
librarse de (n.)	to get rid of (someone/something)
llenar(se) de (n.)	to fill (up) with (something)
maldecir de (n.)	to speak ill of (something)
maravillarse de (n.)	to marvel at (someone/something)
marcharse de (n.)	to leave (somewhere), to walk away from (somewhere)
morir de (n.)	to die of/from (something [an illness, a situation])
morirse de (n.)	to be dying for/of (something)
ocuparse de (n./v.)	to concern oneself with (someone/something / doing something), to pay attention to (someone/something / doing something), to deal with (someone/something / doing something)
olvidarse de (n./v.)	to forget (someone/something), to forget to (do something)
parar de (v.)	to cease (doing something), to stop (doing something)
pensar de (n.)	to think of (someone/something), to have an opinion about (someone/something)

preciarse de (n./v.)	to brag about (something / doing something), to boast of (something / doing something), to pride oneself on (something / doing something)
prescindir de (n./v.)	to do without (someone/something / doing something), to neglect (someone/something / doing something)
probar de (n.)	to sample (something), to take a taste of (something)
quejarse de (n./v.)	to complain of/about (someone/something / doing something)
salir de (n.)	to leave (somewhere), to go away from (somewhere)
separarse de (n.)	to leave (someone/something/somewhere), to part company with (someone/something/somewhere)
servir de (n.)	to act as (someone/something), to serve as (someone/something), to be useful for (someone/something)
sorprenderse de (n.)	to be surprised at (something), to be amazed at (something)
terminar de (v.)	to finish (doing something)
tratar de (v.)	to try to (do something)
tratarse de (n./v.)	to be a question of (something / doing something)

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. Acabo de comer una hamburguesa.
- _____ 2. Usualmente, me alegro de tomar un examen.
- _____ 3. Cada primavera me libero de muchas cosas que ya no necesito en mi casa.
- _____ 4. Gozo mucho del teatro.
- _____ 5. En mi casa estoy encargado/encargada de sacar la basura.
- _____ 6. Parte de mi decisión de ir de vacaciones depende de la cantidad de dinero que tengo en el banco.
- _____ 7. Me aburro mucho de las personas que no piensan antes de hablar.
- _____ 8. Cada día trato de ser una persona honrada (*honest*).
- _____ 9. Típicamente salgo de mi casa entre las siete y las nueve de la mañana.
- _____ 10. Normalmente no me acuerdo de pagar las cuentas (*bills*) cada mes.
- _____ 11. La fruta puede servir de ensalada o de postre.
- _____ 12. A veces me olvido del nombre de una persona a quien acabo de conocer.
- _____ 13. Cada año miles de personas mueren de cáncer de pulmón (*lung*).
- _____ 14. Si no desayuno para las once de la mañana me muero de

_____ 14. Si no desayuno, para las once de la mañana me muero de hambre.

_____ 15. Muchas personas se quejan de pagar los impuestos cada 15 de abril.

17.5 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the preceding list of verbs that require **de**.

He always forgets to take his medicine.

This sofa serves as a comfortable (cómodo) bed.

We have to finish cleaning the house by four thirty.

Every day I get rid of at least (por lo menos) one thing because I don't like clutter (el desorden).

She always complains about working so much (tanto).

I marvel at people who can dance well.

I'm in charge of cooking, and you're in charge of serving the meals.

I often forget a person's name, but I never forget his face.

You should get away from dangerous people.

1. I have just read a wonderful article (el artículo) in the newspaper.

2. Don't we have orange juice? I'm dying of thirst (la sed).

3. Who's going to take care of your house next week?

j. *They're talking about moving (mudarse) to Omaha next year.*

k. *I don't like to be with him because he always speaks ill (mal) of other people.*

l. *There are people who take advantage of others without remorse (remordimiento).*

en

When a Spanish verb takes the preposition **en**, that **en** will often translate as English “in” or “on.” For example, **confiar en** means “to confide in, trust”; **insistir en** means “to insist on.”

One of the more frequently used verbs in this category is **pensar en**, which usually means to think about”; however, some English speakers use the expression “to think on.” Although some verbs in this category are idiomatic in their translation, many demonstrate the use of “in” or “on.” Familiarize yourself with them, and use them until you feel comfortable.

abdicar en (n.)	to abdicate to (someone)
complacerse en (n./v.)	to take pleasure in (something / doing something)
confiar en (n./v.)	to trust (someone/something [a situation] / doing something), to confide in (someone/something [a situation] / doing something)
consentir en (v.)	to consent to (do something)
consistir en (n./v.)	to consist of (something / doing something)
convenir en (n./v.)	to agree to (something / do something)
convertirse en (n.)	to become (someone/something), to change into (someone/something)
empeñarse en (n./v.)	to insist on (something / doing something), to persist in (something / doing something), to get involved in (something / doing something)
equivocarse en (n.)	to make a mistake in (something)
esforzarse en (n./v.)	to try hard in (something), to endeavor to (do something)
influir en (n.)	to influence (someone/something), to have an effect on (someone/something)

insistir en (n./v.)	to insist on (something / doing something)
interesarse en (n.)	to be interested in (someone/something)
meterse en (n./v.)	to become involved in (something / doing something)
mojarse en (n.)	to get mixed up in (something)
molestarse en (v.)	to take the trouble to (do something)
montar en (n.)	to ride (something [a bicycle])
obstinarse en (n./v.)	to persist in (something / doing something)
ocuparse en (n./v.)	to be busy with (something / doing something)
parar(se) en (n.)	to stop at (somewhere), to stay at (somewhere)
pensar en (n./v.)	to think about (someone/something / doing something)
persistir en (n./v.)	to persist in (something / doing something)
quedar en (n./v.)	to agree to (something / do something)
reflexionar en (n.)	to reflect on (something), to think about (something)
tardar en (n./v.)	to delay in (something), to take long to (do something)
trabajar en (n.)	to work on/at (something)
verse en (n.)	to find oneself in/at (something [a situation] / somewhere)

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. No me gusta meterme en los problemas de los demás.
- _____ 2. Los huevos rancheros consiste en huevos y rancheros.
- _____ 3. Yo confío en mi mejor amigo/amiga.
- _____ 4. En el cuento “Cenicienta,” los ratones se convierten en caballos.
- _____ 5. La memoria de la madre Teresa influye en muchas personas por el mundo.
- _____ 6. Tardo más de veinte minutos en ir de mi casa al aeropuerto.
- _____ 7. Es descortés persistir en discutir algo que la otra persona no quiere discutir.
- _____ 8. Pienso mucho en el significado de la vida.
- _____ 9. Siempre pienso en el bienestar (*well-being*) de otros.
- _____ 10. Todos los sábados me paro en una gasolinera para comprar chicle y revistas.
- _____ 11. Siempre me empeño en leer un contrato palabra por palabra antes de firmarlo.
- _____ 12. Es peligroso montar en un coche con una persona que está borracha (*drunk*).
- _____ 13. Las personas obsesionadas con el control siempre insisten en tener la última palabra.
- _____ 14. Tengo que confesarlo: Me esfuerzo en aprender a usar el

_____ *...aunque que comencé a leer cuando era pequeño y ahora lo hago en Internet, pero es muy difícil.*

_____ 15. Nunca quedo en hacer algo que es peligroso.

17.6 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the preceding list of verbs that require en.*

Some people persist in exercising (hacer ejercicio) even (aun) when they're sick.

_____ *María takes pleasure in playing the guitar at parties.*

_____ *First I think about food, and then I think about eating something.*

_____ *Every day we should reflect on something good in (de) this world.*

_____ *At the end (A finales) of the month, Marcos always finds himself in a jam (el apuro).*

_____ *When the police arrive, the thief consents to go with them peacefully (pacíficamente).*

_____ *People who gossip (chismear) involve themselves in other people's lives.*

_____ *Juan and María agree to consult a psychiatrist (el psiquiatra).*

_____ *Every year I agree to contribute (donar) to the Cancer Society.*

_____ *1). You shouldn't get involved in their problems.*

_____ *2). I'm not thinking about anything now.*

_____ *3). My sister never takes the trouble to telephone (llamar por teléfono).*

j. *I am very interested in international politics* (la política internacional).

k. *It takes me one hour to drive to the stadium* (el estadio) *from here*.

l. *For exercise, the children ride bicycles*.

para

The smallest group of verbs that take a preposition consists of the verbs that take **para**. The preposition **para** often implies moving ahead or toward something. The following verbs indicate that an action is occurring for the purpose of something else to happen—something moves ahead, precipitating something else.

estar listo/lista para (v.)	to be ready to (<i>do something</i>)
estar para (v.)	to be about to (<i>do something</i>)
prepararse para (n./v.)	to prepare oneself for (<i>something</i>), to prepare oneself to (<i>do something</i>)
quedarse para (v.)	to stay to (<i>do something</i>)
sentarse para (v.)	to sit down to (<i>do something</i>)
servir para (n./v.)	to be of use for (<i>something / doing something</i>), to serve as (<i>something</i>)
trabajar para (n./v.)	to work for (<i>someone [a company]</i>), to strive to (<i>do something</i>)

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. Trabajo para una persona muy simpática y honrada.
- _____ 2. Cuando me siento para comer, generalmente tengo conmigo un periódico o una revista.
- _____ 3. Para mí, la televisión no sirve para nada.
- _____ 4. Estoy listo/lista para tomar el examen final en esta clase de español.
- _____ 5. Cada mañana me preparo para el trabajo.
- _____ 6. Un diccionario de español sirve para enseñar el idioma.
- _____ 7. Cuando estoy para dormir, enciendo todas las luces en la casa.
- _____ 8. Cada día trabajo para mejorarme y entender más del mundo.
- _____ 9. Un buen negociante se queda en la oficina para terminar el

_____9. Un buen negociante se queda en la oficina para terminar el trabajo cada noche.

_____10. Cuando me preparo para acostarme, siempre me cepillo los dientes.

_____11. El anillo de matrimonio sirve para simbolizar el compromiso (*commitment*).

_____12. Un contable (*accountant*) trabaja para ahorrar (*to save*) dinero para su cliente.

17.7 EJERCICIO

Traducción Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the preceding list of verbs that require **para**.

Usually it's very late when I sit down to study.

Martha Stewart says that many things in the garbage can (la basura) serve as decorations in the house.

Are you ready to leave? Yes, we're ready to leave.

We're about to eat lunch (almorzar).

I want to work for another company.

Do you want to stay to watch the news (las noticias) with me?

This film is of no use.

Every January, many people strive to lose weight (perder peso).

Melissa needs at least (por lo menos) two hours in order to prepare herself for her date (la cita).

1). Bjorn is preparing himself to find a new job, because he works for a real brute

(el bruto).

por

Verbs that take **por** often deal with emotions (for example, **llorar por**) or convey a feeling of equality in the sense of “on behalf of” (for example, **abogar por**).

The difference between **para** (purpose and destination) and **por** (emotions and equality) is seen in the verb pairs **estar para** (“to be about to” do something) and **estar por** (“to be in favor of” doing something), as well as **trabajar para** (“to work for” someone) and **trabajar por** (“to work in place of” or “to work on behalf of” someone).

abogar por (n.)	to plead on behalf of (someone/something)
acabar por (v.)	to end by (doing something), to wind up (doing something)
apurarse por (n./v.)	to worry oneself about (someone/something / doing something), to fret over (someone/something / doing something)
cambiar por (n.)	to exchange (something)
clasificar por (n.)	to classify in/by (something)
dar gracias por (n./v.)	to thank for (something / doing something), to give thanks for (something / doing something)
esforzarse por (n./v.)	to strive for (someone/something / doing something)
estar por (v.)	to be inclined to (do something), to be in favor of (doing something)
hacer por (v.)	to try to (do something)
impacientarse por (n./v.)	to grow impatient for (someone/something / doing something), to be impatient to (do something)
llorar por (n./v.)	to cry for/about (someone/something / doing something)
luchar por (n./v.)	to struggle for (someone/something / doing something)
mandar por (n.)	to send via (something [mail])
mirar por (n.)	to care about (someone), to worry about (someone)
morirse por (n./v.)	to be dying for (something), to be dying to (do something)
ofenderse por (n./v.)	to be offended by (something / doing something)
optar por (n./v.)	to choose (something / doing something), to opt for (something / doing something)
preocuparse por (n./v.)	to worry about (someone/something / doing something)
rabiar por (n./v.)	to be crazy about (someone/something / doing something)
terminar por (v.)	to end by (doing something)
trabajar por (n.)	to work for (someone [as a substitute])
votar por (n.)	to vote for (someone/something)

EJERCICIO

¿Verdadero o falso?

- _____ 1. Me preocupo mucho por el dinero.
- _____ 2. Cuando tengo que decidir entre la televisión o el teatro

- _____ 1. Cuando tengo que decidir entre la televisión o el teatro, usualmente opto por el teatro.
- _____ 3. Cherie Booth y Gloria Allred abogan por sus clientes.
- _____ 4. Las personas de Argentina lloran por Evita Perón.
- _____ 5. En las elecciones políticas, siempre voto por el candidato más moderado.
- _____ 6. Romeo rabia por Julieta.
- _____ 7. Puedo comprar más si cambio mis dólares por pesos.
- _____ 8. Durante los fines de semana, estoy por dormir mucho y trabajar poco.
- _____ 9. A veces doy gracias por las dificultades de la vida.
- _____ 10. Cuando un maestro está enfermo, típicamente un sustituto trabaja por él.
- _____ 11. Con frecuencia la orquesta termina por tocar algo excepcional.
- _____ 12. Si no tengo planes específicos para el fin de semana, usualmente acabo por no hacer nada.
- _____ 13. Me esfuerzo por hacer lo mejor que pueda todos los días.
- _____ 14. Me impaciento por personas que conducen muy lentamente.
- _____ 15. Durante el año, mando muchos regalos por correo.

17.8 EJERCICIO

Traducción *Translate the following sentences into Spanish, using the preceding list of verbs that require **por**.*

Harold worries about losing his teeth and his hair.

In the novel Anna Karenina, Levin struggles always to do the right thing (lo correcto).

The people (el pueblo) of Argentina shouldn't cry for Evita.

I worry a lot about you.

Many people are offended by the waste (el desperdicio) of food in restaurants.

I'm dying to see your new hairdo (el peinado).

In this office, we classify everything by size (el tamaño).

Usually a gymnast (el gimnasta) ends by doing something spectacular (espectacular).

They always opt for swimming in the river.

l. When I have a choice (la elección) between two movies, I usually opt for the one that has the better reviews (la reseña).

.. Laura is impatient to move (mudarse) to another part of the country.

!. Many lawyers plead on behalf of a guilty (culpable) person.

l. We give you thanks for telling us the truth.

l. I always classify my books alphabetically (orden alfabético).

l. She always votes for the less attractive candidate.

Appendix A

The eight parts of speech

Noun

A word that represents a person, place, thing, or idea.

jefe	boss	casa	house
lápiz	pencil	libertad	liberty

Verb

A word that expresses an action, occurrence, or mode of being.

saltar	jump	llover	rain	ser	be
--------	------	--------	------	-----	----

Adjective

A word that modifies or describes a noun. It can be descriptive or quantitative.

DESCRIPTIVE					
grande	big	alto	tall	bello	beautiful
QUANTITATIVE					
varios	several	muchos	many	dos	two

NOTE Articles are classified as definite and indefinite. Technically, articles are adjectives, because they modify nouns; however, many people believe that they deserve separate status due to their frequency of use.

el, la	the	un, una	a, an
--------	-----	---------	-------

Adverb

A word that modifies or describes a verb, adjective, or other adverb.

allí	there	muy	very	lentamente	slowly
------	-------	-----	------	------------	--------

Preposition

A word that shows the relationship of a noun or pronoun to another word in a phrase, clause, or sentence.

de *of*

entre *between*

para *for*

Interjection

A word or phrase used as an exclamation without any grammatical function.

¡Maravilloso! *Great!*

¡Caramba! *Darn!*

Pronoun

A word that replaces a noun that is understood because of previous use or from context.

él *he*

nuestro *our*

nadie *no one*

Conjunction

A word that connects two words, phrases, clauses, or sentences.

y *and*

ni... ni *neither . . . nor*

Appendix B

Pronouns

Personal pronouns

A personal pronoun (also called a subject pronoun) replaces a noun that names the subject or actor in a clause or sentence.

Yo comí un durazno, pero **tú** comiste toda la sandía. *I ate a peach, but **you** ate all the watermelon.*

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
yo	<i>I</i>	nosotros	<i>we (masc., masc. & fem.)</i>
		nosotras	<i>we (fem.)</i>
tú	<i>you (informal)</i>	vosotros	<i>you (informal, masc., masc. & fem.)</i>
		vosotras	<i>you (informal, fem.)</i>
él	<i>he</i>	ellos	<i>they (masc., masc. & fem.)</i>
ella	<i>she</i>	ellas	<i>they (fem.)</i>
usted	<i>you (formal)</i>	ustedes	<i>you (formal)</i>

Interrogative pronouns

An interrogative pronoun is used in asking questions. The answer sought will be a noun or pronoun (either a person or thing).

¿Quién está en la cárcel?	<i>Who is in jail?</i>
¿Cuál prefieres?	<i>Which do you prefer?</i>
¿Quién? ¿Quiénes?	<i>Who?</i>
¿A quién? ¿A quiénes?	<i>(To) Whom?</i>
¿De quién? ¿De quiénes?	<i>Whose?</i>
¿Qué?	<i>What? Which?</i>
¿Cuál? ¿Cuáles?	<i>Which? What?</i>

Prepositional pronouns

A prepositional pronoun follows a preposition and functions as the object of the preposition, replacing a noun that names a person or thing.

para mí	<i>for me</i>
a usted	<i>to you</i>
cerca de ella	<i>near her</i>

Prepositional pronouns are nearly identical to the subject pronouns, with the exceptions of **mí** and **ti** and the addition of the third-person form **ello**, which represents a masculine or neuter noun.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
mí	<i>me</i>	nosotros	<i>us (masc., masc. & fem.)</i>
		nosotras	<i>us (fem.)</i>
ti	<i>you (informal)</i>	vosotros	<i>you (informal, masc., masc. & fem.)</i>
		vosotras	<i>you (informal, fem.)</i>
él	<i>him</i>	ellos	<i>them, it (masc.)</i>
ella	<i>her, it (fem.)</i>	ellas	<i>them, it (fem.)</i>
usted	<i>you (formal)</i>	ustedes	<i>you (formal)</i>
ello	<i>it (masc., neut.)</i>		

Pronouns with **con**: Certain pronouns that follow the preposition **con** (“with”) take on a special form.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
conmigo	<i>with me</i>	con nosotros, con nosotras	<i>with us</i>
contigo	<i>with you</i>	con vosotros, con vosotras	<i>with you</i>
consigo	<i>with him, with her, with you</i>	consigo	<i>with them, with you</i>

In certain situations, the standard prepositional pronouns are used with **con** (“with”) in the third person, as shown below.

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
con él	<i>with him</i>	con ellos	<i>with them</i>
con ella	<i>with her, it</i>	con ellas	<i>with them</i>
con usted	<i>with you</i>	con ustedes	<i>with you</i>
con ello	<i>with it</i>		

Subject pronouns with prepositions: In Spanish, there are six prepositions that always take a subject pronoun, rather than a standard prepositional pronoun.

entre	<i>between</i>	menos	<i>except</i>
excepto	<i>except</i>	salvo	<i>except</i>
incluso	<i>including</i>	según	<i>according to</i>

Reflexive pronouns following a preposition: A reflexive action (an action that “reflects” back on the performer) can be expressed with a preposition followed by a reflexive pronoun.

a mí mismo	to myself	a nosotros mismos	to ourselves
a mí misma	to myself	a nosotras mismas	to ourselves
a ti mismo	to yourself	a vosotros mismos	to yourselves
a ti misma	to yourself	a vosotras mismas	to yourselves
a sí mismo	to himself, to yourself, to itself	a sí mismos	to themselves, yourselves
a sí misma	to herself, to yourself, to itself	a sí mismas	to themselves, yourselves

Possessive pronouns

A possessive pronoun replaces the nouns that name the owner of an object and the object itself.

El sapo es **mío**.

*The toad is **mine**.*

Una amiga **tuya** canta muy bien.

*A friend **of yours** sings very well.*

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
mío, míos	mine	nuestro, nuestros	ours
mía, mías	mine	nuestra, nuestras	ours
tuyo, tuyos	yours	vuestro, vuestros	yours
tuya, tuyas	yours	vuestra, vuestras	yours
suyo, suyos	his, hers, yours, its	suyo, suyos	theirs, yours
suya, suyas	his, hers, yours, its	suya, suyas	theirs, yours

Demonstrative pronouns

A demonstrative pronoun replaces an understood noun and points out its location relative to the speaker.

Me gustan las dos camisas, pero prefiero **ésta**.

*I like both shirts, but I prefer **that one**.*

	MASCULINE	FEMININE	NEUTER
<i>this (one)</i>	éste	ésta	esto
<i>these (ones)</i>	éstos	éestas	
<i>that (one)</i>	ése	ésa	eso
<i>those (ones)</i>	ésos	ésas	
<i>that over there</i>	aquél	aquella	aquello
<i>those over there</i>	aquéllos	aquellas	

Numbers as pronouns

A number used as a pronoun replaces an understood or omitted noun. It assumes the meaning of the noun itself as well as the number.

Las tortitas son deliciosas. Dame **una**,
por favor.

*The cupcakes are delicious. Give me **one**, please.*

De todos los coches que probamos,
me gusta más el **segundo**.

*Of all the cars we tried out, I like the **second one**
best.*

CARDINAL NUMBERS
(one, two, three, . . .)

ORDINAL NUMBERS
(first, second, third, . . .)

uno, una	primero, primera
dos	segundo, segunda
tres	tercero, tercera
cuatro	cuarto, cuarta
cinco	quinto, quinta
seis	sexto, sexta
siete	séptimo, séptima
ocho	octavo, octava
nueve	noveno, novena
diez	décimo, décima

Adjective pronouns

An adjective pronoun is an adjective that assumes the meaning of an understood, irrelevant, or omitted noun. Descriptive, or qualitative, adjectives easily become pronouns.

¡Anoche Carmen salió con un **anciano**!
[hombre *is understood*]

*Last night Carmen went out with an **old man**!*

Tú compraste los platos azules, pero yo
compré los **blancos**. [platos *is omitted*,
previously stated]

*You bought the blue plates, but I bought the
white (ones).*

Many adjective pronouns are quantitative pronouns that correspond to indefinite pronouns in English. Others are adjectives with “clipped”—or omitted—words, which many times refer to unspecified people or things.

Nadie vino a la fiesta.

*No **one** came to the party.*

Te di tu invitación, pero mandé **las demás**
por correo.

*I gave you your invitation, but I sent **the rest**
by mail.*

Below are several frequently used adjective pronouns; some are quantitative and others refer to unspecified nouns.

algo	<i>something, anything</i>
alguien	<i>somebody, someone</i>
algunos, algunas	<i>some (of them), any (of them)</i>
ambos, ambas	<i>both</i>
cada	<i>each</i>
cada uno, cada una	<i>each one</i>
cualquiera	<i>anyone, anybody, any one (person), anything, whichever, whatever</i>
cualesquiera	<i>any people [pl.], any [pl.]</i>
demasiado, demasiada	<i>too much</i>
demasiados, demasiadas	<i>too many</i>
el/la mayor	<i>the oldest (one)</i>
el/la menor	<i>the youngest (one)</i>
lo mejor	<i>the best (thing)</i>
lo mismo	<i>the same (thing)</i>
lo peor	<i>the worst (thing)</i>
los dos, las dos	<i>both</i>
los otros, las otras	<i>the others</i>
mucho, mucha	<i>much, a lot of</i>
muchos, muchas	<i>many, a lot of</i>
nada	<i>nothing</i>
nadie	<i>nobody, no one</i>
ninguno, ninguna	<i>none, not anything, neither one</i>
otro, otra	<i>another, the other</i>
poco, poca	<i>(a) little</i>
pocos, pocas	<i>few</i>
todo	<i>everything, all</i>
todos, todas	<i>everyone, everybody</i>
último, última	<i>last</i>
unos, unas	<i>some</i>
unos cuantos, unas cuantas	<i>a few (of them)</i>
varios, varias	<i>several</i>

Relative pronouns

A relative pronoun represents understood or omitted material and connects a dependent clause with an independent, or principal, clause.

Las personas que viven allí son muy simpáticas.	<i>The people who live there are very nice.</i>
Ella es la señora con quien trabajo.	<i>She is the lady with whom I work.</i>
Lo que debes hacer es ganar la lotería.	<i>What you should do is win the lottery.</i>

Below are several frequently used relative pronouns.

cuyo, cuya, cuyos, cuyas	whose
el cual, la cual	the one who, the one that
el que, la que	the one who, the one that
lo que	that which, what, whatever
los cuales, las cuales	those who, those that
los que, las que	those who, those that
que	that, who, which, that which (following a preposition)
quien, quienes	whom (following a preposition)

Direct object pronouns

A direct object pronoun replaces a noun that names the direct object of the verb in a sentence or clause. It answers the question “What?” or “Whom?”

¿Ese libro? Lo leí. ¿Cuándo vas a leer lo tú?	<i>That book? I read it. When are you going to read it?</i>
Tú ya no me amas, pero yo sigo queriéndote.	<i>You don't love me anymore, but I still love you.</i>

SINGULAR	PLURAL
me <i>me</i>	nos <i>us</i>
te <i>you</i>	os <i>you</i>
lo <i>him, you, it</i>	los <i>them, you</i>
la <i>her, you, it</i>	las <i>them, you</i>

Indirect object pronouns

An indirect object pronoun replaces a noun that names the indirect object of the verb in a sentence or clause. It answers the questions “To whom?” and “For whom?”

Juan siempre le da una rosa blanca a María.	<i>Juan always gives María a white rose.</i>
¡No me digas mentiras!	<i>Don't tell me lies!</i>
No he oído el último chiste. Cuéntame lo , por favor.	<i>I haven't heard the latest joke. Tell it to me, please.</i>

SINGULAR	PLURAL
me <i>me</i>	nos <i>us</i>
te <i>you</i>	os <i>you</i>
le <i>him, her, it, you</i>	les <i>them, you</i>

Reflexive object pronouns

A reflexive object pronoun indicates that the subject and the object of an action are the same person or thing.

Me veo en el espejo. *I see myself in the mirror.*
 Nos cepillamos los dientes tres veces al día. *We brush our teeth three times a day.*

SINGULAR		PLURAL	
me	<i>myself</i>	nos	<i>ourselves</i>
te	<i>yourself</i>	os	<i>yourselves</i>
se	<i>himself, herself, itself, yourself</i>	se	<i>themselves, yourselves</i>

1. Double-object pronoun order: RID

RID is an acronym that is useful for remembering the placement order for two object pronouns in a sentence. Two object pronouns in a sentence are always used in the following order: *reflexive* object pronoun, *indirect* object pronoun, *direct* object pronoun.

Me encanta tu pelo. ¿Te [R] lo [D] lavas mucho? *I love your hair. Do you wash it a lot?*
 Él no sabe la verdad. Se [I] la [D] debemos decir. *He doesn't know the truth. We should tell it to him.*

In the second example, the indirect and direct object pronouns could also be attached to the infinitive: **Debemos decírsela**. Note that an accent mark is usually required to retain the original stress in the infinitive. Also note that whenever the two object pronouns begin with the letter *l*, the *l* in the first pronoun changes to *s*: **Le la debemos decir** becomes **Se la debemos decir**. Following are patterns for the more common combinations of double object pronouns.

R + D + CONJUGATED VERB	I + D + CONJUGATED VERB
OR	OR
INFINITIVE + R + D	INFINITIVE + I + D

2. Reciprocal pronouns

A reciprocal pronoun expresses reciprocity; it indicates an action that goes back and forth between two or more subjects.

Nos conocimos ayer. *We met each other yesterday.*
 Se hablan mucho. *They talk to one another a lot.*

nos	<i>each other, each of us, one another</i>
os	<i>each other, each of you, one another</i>
se	<i>each other, each of them, each of you, one another</i>

3. The pronoun se and the passive voice

Se is commonly used to indicate that an action is performed by an unspecified subject, expressing the passive voice in Spanish.

La cena **se comió** junto al lago.

*Dinner **was eaten** by the lake.*

Se also is used to express an unknown, impersonal subject.

En este colegio **se estudia** mucho.

{ *In this high school, **one studies** a lot.*
{ *In this high school, **they study** a lot.*

¡No **se debe** fumar nunca!

{ ***One should** never smoke!*
{ ***You should** never smoke!*

Actions involving inanimate objects often employ **se**.

Mi coche **se me descompone** todo el tiempo.

*My car **breaks down** on me all the time.*

Los cristales **se quebraron** cuando ella cantó.

*The glassware **broke** when she sang.*

The pattern using **se** to express the passive voice is shown below.

SE + THIRD-PERSON CONJUGATED VERB

Appendix C

Prepositions

Prepositions that show a relationship between nouns and/or pronouns

acerca de	<i>about</i>
además de	<i>besides, in addition to</i>
con	<i>with</i>
contra	<i>against</i>
en lugar de	<i>instead of</i>
en vez de	<i>instead of</i>
excepto	<i>except</i>
menos	<i>except</i>
salvo	<i>except</i>
según	<i>according to</i>
sin	<i>without</i>
sobre	<i>about, on (topic)</i>

Prepositions of location

a	<i>at</i>
a la derecha de	<i>to the right of</i>
a la izquierda de	<i>to the left of</i>
a través de	<i>across</i>
al lado de	<i>next to, next door to</i>
cerca de	<i>near, close to</i>
con	<i>with</i>
debajo de	<i>under</i>
delante de	<i>in front of</i>
dentro de	<i>inside</i>
detrás de	<i>behind</i>
en	<i>in, at, on</i>
encima de	<i>on top of</i>
enfrente de	<i>across from, opposite</i>
entre (<i>dos personas o cosas</i>)	<i>between</i> (two people or things)
entre (<i>varias personas o cosas</i>)	<i>among</i> (several people or things)
frente a	<i>facing</i>
fuera de	<i>outside</i>
junto a	<i>by, next to, next door to</i>
lejos de	<i>far from</i>
sobre	<i>on top of, above</i>

Prepositions of movement

a lo largo de	<i>along</i>
alrededor de	<i>around</i>
hacia	<i>toward</i>
más allá de	<i>beyond</i>
por	<i>through, throughout</i>

Prepositions of geographical orientation

al este de	<i>(to the) east of</i>
al nordeste/noreste de	<i>(to the) northeast of</i>
al noroeste de	<i>(to the) northwest of</i>
al norte de	<i>(to the) north of</i>
al oeste de	<i>(to the) west of</i>
al sudeste/sureste de	<i>(to the) southeast of</i>
al sudoeste/suroeste de	<i>(to the) southwest of</i>
al sur de	<i>(to the) south of</i>

Prepositions of origin and destination

Origin

a causa de	<i>because of, for</i>
de	<i>from, of</i>
de (to indicate authorship)	<i>by</i>
desde	<i>(all the way) from</i>
por	<i>because of, for</i>
por (to indicate authorship)	<i>by</i>

Destination

a	<i>to</i>
hacia	<i>toward</i>
para (purpose/destination)	<i>for</i>

Prepositions of time

a	<i>to, until</i>
antes de	<i>before</i>
desde	<i>since</i>
después de	<i>after</i>
durante	<i>during</i>
hasta	<i>until</i>
por	<i>through</i>

The uses of para and por

Para

1. Destination

a. To indicate real or figurative destination **b.** To express the recipient of an action **c.** To indicate direction and/or final destination **d.** To indicate an action's aim or objective, including profession

2. Purpose
a. To express purpose before an infinitive **b.** To indicate purpose for doing something; "in order to" before an infinitive

3. Deadline
a. To express a specific time limit or deadline in the future **b.** To express a limited time span in the future

4. Standard
a. To express a comparison to a certain standard **b.** To express an opinion or personal standard

Por

a. To express duration of time

b. To indicate periods of time during the 24-hour day **c.** To express English use of Latin *per*

Substitution or exchange

a. To indicate an equal exchange or trade **b.** To express substitution (“on behalf of,” “in place of”) **c.** To express thanks and gratitude **3.** Motivation

a. To indicate “because of” or having done something (**por** + infinitive) **b.** To express a motive for doing something **c.** To express a reason for something (**por** + noun or **por** + infinitive) **4.** Movement

a. To express means of transportation **b.** To express means of sending messages or information **c.** To indicate the point of an intermediate destination **d.** To indicate movement in an area **5.** Emotions

a. To express a like (or dislike) or an emotion for someone or something **6.** Idioms

a. To appear in idiomatic expressions

Answer key

Free audio answer key available online. *See the copyright page for details.*

I PRONOUNS

1 Subject pronouns

- l 1. yo
- 2. nosotros/nosotras
- 3. ellos/ellas/ustedes
- 4. él/ella/usted
- 5. vosotros/vosotras
- 6. nosotros/nosotras
- 7. él/ella/usted
- 8. ellos/ellas/ustedes
- 9. vosotros/vosotras
- 10. tú
- 11. él/ella/usted
- 12. yo
- 13. tú
- 14. vosotros/vosotras
- 15. él/ella/usted
- 16. yo
- 17. tú
- 18. nosotros/nosotras
- 19. ellos/ellas/ustedes

19. ellos/ellas/ustedes

20. tú

2 1. yo tengo

2. tú tienes

3. él quiere

4. nosotros estamos

5. vosotros salís

6. ellos/ellas/ustedes quieren

7. yo puedo

8. ella viene

9. nosotros/nosotras somos

10. tú sales

11. usted juega

12. yo pongo

13. ustedes ponen

14. ellos dicen

15. vosotros/vosotras estáis

16. tú oyes

17. ellas pueden

18. nosotros vemos

19. nosotros/nosotras oímos

20. vosotros/vosotras veis

2 Interrogative pronouns

l 1. ¿Quién es ella?

2. ¿Quiénes son ellos?

3. ¿Quién eres? or ¿Quién es usted?

4. ¿Quiénes sois? or ¿Quiénes son ustedes?

5. ¿Quién trabaja aquí?

6. ¿Quién mira la televisión?

7. ¿Quién habla español aquí?
8. ¿Quién no vive aquí?
9. ¿Quién escribe el libro?
10. ¿Quién es tu (or su) amigo?

! 1. ¿A quién amas?

2. ¿A quién ves?
3. ¿A quién miras?
4. ¿A quiénes miras?
5. ¿A quién buscas?
6. ¿A quiénes buscas?
7. ¿A quién escuchas?
8. ¿A quiénes escuchas?
9. ¿A quién conoces?
10. ¿A quiénes conoces?

! 1. ¿De quién es este coche?

2. ¿De quién son las llaves que están en la mesa?
3. ¿De quiénes son los coches que están sucios?
4. ¿De quiénes son las niñas que leen estos libros?
5. ¿De quién es el gato que bebe la leche?
6. ¿De quién son los vecinos que viven en la casa azul?
7. ¿De quiénes son los estudiantes más inteligentes?
8. ¿De quién es el coche que no funciona?
9. ¿De quién es este abrigo?
10. ¿De quién es el loro que habla italiano?
11. ¿De quiénes son estos discos compactos?
12. ¿De quién es esta mochila?

! 1. ¿Qué libro es más interesante?

2. ¿Qué actor es más popular?
3. ¿Qué chica es tu prima?

4. ¿Qué comida tiene más grasa?
 5. ¿Qué tienda vende más ropa?
 6. ¿Cuál comes más, el pollo o el pescado?
 7. ¿Cuál es más popular?
 8. ¿Cuáles llevas más?
 9. ¿Qué zapatos llevas más?
 10. ¿Qué sombrero es más cómodo?
 11. ¿Cuál de los sombreros es más cómodo?
 12. ¿Qué programa miras?
 13. ¿Cuáles de los nuevos programas miras?
 14. ¿Cuáles miras?
- 5 1. ¿Qué?, ¿Qué día es hoy?
2. ¿Cuál?, ¿Cuál es la fecha de hoy?
 3. ¿Cuál?, ¿Cuál es su nombre?
 4. ¿Qué?, ¿Qué hora es?
 5. ¿Cuál?, ¿Cuál es tu razón por esto?
 6. ¿Qué?, ¿Qué es eso?
 7. ¿Qué?, ¿Qué libro quieres tú?
 8. ¿Cuál?, ¿Cuáles quieres?
 9. ¿Qué?, ¿Qué mujer es tu amiga?
 10. ¿Qué?, ¿Qué significa esto?
 11. ¿Cuál?, ¿Cuál es la respuesta?
 12. ¿Qué?, ¿Qué quieres saber?
 13. ¿Cuál?, ¿Cuál es tu nombre?
 14. ¿Cuál?, ¿Cuál es tu dirección?

3 Prepositional pronouns

- l 1. Él tiene un libro para mí.
2. Tengo un regalo para ti.
 3. ¿Qué tienes para mí?

3. ¿Que tienes para mí?
 4. La mesa es de ella.
 5. Compro mis libros de ellos.
 6. Él está delante de ello.
 7. Estás detrás de él.
 8. Él vive cerca de mí.
 9. La alfombra está debajo de nosotras.
 10. Él vive cerca de ustedes (or vosotros or vosotras).
 11. Él escribe un libro acerca de ella.
 12. Caminamos detrás de ellos.
 13. Ella baila a la derecha de mí.
 14. Ellos trabajan a la izquierda de ti.
 15. La comida está delante de nosotros.
- 2
1. Estoy contigo.
 2. Usted está conmigo.
 3. Ella está con él.
 4. Él está con ella.
 5. Trabajo contigo ahora.
 6. Ellos viven conmigo.
 7. ¿Estudia ella contigo?
 8. ¿Quién vive con ustedes?
 9. ¿Por qué no bailas con él?
 10. Quiero hablar con usted.
 11. Él vive con nosotros.
 12. Ella siempre lleva las llaves consigo.
 13. Ellos nunca llevan las llaves consigo.
 14. Martín está conmigo.
 15. ¿Por qué (usted) no lleva el paraguas consigo?
 16. ¿Por qué (ellas) no llevan el paraguas consigo?

› 1. Hay veinte personas aquí, incluso tú y yo.

2. Según ella, el dinero puede comprar la felicidad.

3. Entre tú, yo y el piano de cola, esta pintura es espantosa.

4. Creo que todo el mundo habla francés aquí menos (or excepto or salvo) yo.

5. Entre nosotros y ellos, tenemos suficiente dinero.

6. Todos aquí están escandalizados, incluso yo.

7. Todos en la vecindad tienen una piscina salvo (or menos or excepto) nosotros.

8. Tenemos muchas dificultades, según yo.

9. Todos están listos, excepto (or menos or salvo) usted.

10. Según ellos, es posible vivir en Marte.

‡ 1. Compro el coche para mí mismo. or Compro el coche para mí misma.

2. Él hace todo para sí mismo.

3. Ellos hacen todo por sí mismos.

4. Ella perjudica a sí misma cuando dice una mentira.

5. Sólo perjudicáis a vosotros mismos. or Sólo perjudicáis a vosotras mismas.

6. Escribo notas a mí mismo para recordar las cosas que necesito hacer. or
Escribo notas a mí misma para recordar las cosas que necesito hacer.

7. Debes tener tiempo para ti mismo cada día. or Debes tener tiempo para ti
misma cada día.

8. Ella siempre compra un regalo para sí misma en su cumpleaños.

9. Cuando viajo, envío (or mando) mis compras a mí mismo por correo. or
Cuando viajo, envío (or mando) mis compras a mí misma por correo.

10. Usted no puede vender su casa a sí mismo. ¡Es ridículo! or Usted no puede
vender su casa a sí misma. ¡Es ridículo!

› Pedro es mi amigo. Estoy muy feliz porque vive al lado de mí. Un mapache vive debajo de mi casa. Entre ustedes (or vosotros) y yo, creo que los mapaches son animales interesantes. Leo (or Estoy leyendo) un libro acerca de ellos ahora. Usualmente el mapache vive en un árbol, pero tengo suerte porque mi casa está encima de este mapache. Según Pedro, el mapache es parte de la familia del oso, y él cree que si ve el animal delante de él, es “adiós, mundo.” Cuando Pedro sale de o entra en mi casa, siempre mira a la izquierda y después a la derecha.

4 Possessive pronouns

1. Es mío.

2. Es tuya.

3. Es suyo.

4. Son míos.

5. Son suyos.

6. Es nuestra.

7. Son tuyas.

8. Son vuestros.

9. Son tuyas.

10. Es vuestra.

11. Son mías.

12. Son tuyas.

13. Son nuestras.

14. Es suya.

15. Son tuyas.

2 1. El gato es mío. Los gatos son míos.

2. La culebra es tuya (or vuestra or suya). Las culebras son tuyas (or vuestras or suyas).

3. El pájaro es suyo. Los pájaros son suyos.

4. El mono es suyo. Los monos son suyos.

5. La jirafa es nuestra. Las jirafas son nuestras.

6. El cerdo es suyo. Los cerdos son suyos.

7. La araña es mía. Las arañas son mías.

8. El caballo es tuyo (or vuestro or suyo). Los caballos son tuyos (or vuestros or suyos).

9. La mariposa es suya. Las mariposas son tuyas.

10. El elefante es nuestro. Los elefantes son nuestros.

3 1. Un amigo mío trabaja aquí.

2. Una amiga mía vive aquí.
 3. Algunos (or Unos) amigos míos tienen una cabaña en Canadá.
 4. Una amiga suya estudia español.
 5. Trabajo con una amiga tuya.
 6. Un colega nuestro habla alemán y gaélico.
 7. Ellos no quieren hablar con él porque es un enemigo suyo.
 8. Un amigo tuyo es un amigo mío.
 9. Esas pinturas tuyas son encantadoras.
 10. Una prima nuestra es una princesa en Europa.
- ‡ 1. Su casa está sucia, pero la nuestra está limpia.
2. Sus libros están en la cocina y los míos están en el comedor.
 3. Él guarda su dinero en el banco, pero (yo) guardo el mío en el colchón.
 4. Sus primos viven en Hollywood y los suyos viven en Seattle.
 5. Nuestro perro es un perro pastor, y el suyo es un perro de lana.
 6. Sus joyas son imitaciones, pero las mías son auténticas.
 7. Ellos compran la comida en el supermercado, pero (nosotros) cultivamos la nuestra.
 8. Su abogado trabaja para una firma grande. El nuestro tiene una oficina en un sótano.
 9. Es mi vida. No es la tuya.
 10. Vosotros tenéis vuestros problemas y yo tengo los míos.
- ‡ 1. Su casa es más grande que la mía.
2. Mi casa no es tan grande como la suya.
 3. Su ropa es más cara (or costosa) que la mía.
 4. Vuestras joyas son más elegantes que las nuestras.
 5. Su hurón no es tan amable como el nuestro.
 6. Su termo no está tan lleno como el mío.
 7. El reportaje de María es más interesante que el suyo.
 8. El coche de Juan es más nuevo que el suyo.
 9. Sus sobres son más bonitos que los míos. Voy a comprar una caja.

10. Sus martillos no son tan pesados como los tuyos.

3 1. Tu coche es mejor que el mío.

2. Sus sillas son mejores que las nuestras.

3. Mi pintura es peor que la suya.

4. Los muebles de Elena son peores que los suyos.

5. Su amigo es mayor que el mío.

6. Mis abuelos son mayores que los tuyos.

7. Nuestro hijo es menor que el vuestro.

8. Nuestras carpas doradas son menores que las tuyas.

9. La paella de Julia es mejor que la mía.

10. La música de Beethoven es mejor que la suya.

7 Estoy muy disgustado/disgustada porque Silvia tiene mi anillo. Ella dice que es suyo, pero yo sé que es mío porque tiene mis iniciales. Silvia es cleptómana.

Nada en su casa es suya. Muchas cosas son mías. Por ejemplo, todas las pinturas son mías, el reloj de péndulo es mío, el candelabro en el comedor es mío, la lavadora y la secadora son mías, hasta la comida en el refrigerador es mía. ¿Qué puedo hacer? El famoso abogado Perry Mason (de la televisión clásica) dice que la posesión es el noventa y nueve por ciento de la ley. Por eso, todo es suyo.

5 Demonstrative pronouns

l 1. Este libro es mío, pero ése es suyo.

2. Esta casa es bonita, pero ésa es más bonita.

3. Estos zapatos son míos y ésos son suyos.

4. Estas sillas son tuyas y ésas son mías.

5. Aquel chico es mi vecino y éste es mi hijo.

6. Estas mujeres son mis vecinas, pero aquéllas son de otra ciudad.

7. Ese coche es de Juan y aquél es mío.

8. Esas revistas son terribles, pero éstas son mucho mejores.

9. Este teléfono funciona, pero aquél nunca funciona.

10. Estos programas son terribles, pero ésos son aún peores.

¿ 1. ¡Esto es fantástico!

2. ¿Qué es esto?

3. Eso es un crimen.

4. Yo nunca hago eso.

5. Esto es un pecado.

6. ¿Qué pasa con aquello?

7. Eso es por qué debes votar.

8. Esto es por qué no debo fumar.

9. ¿Quién dice eso?

10. ¿Quién escribe esto?

¿ “¿Quién necesita esto? ¡Esto es tan estúpido! No necesito esto para mi trabajo.”
Algunas personas dicen esto cuando están frustradas o cuando tienen que tomar una clase en la universidad que no quieren tomar. Es esta clase o ésa. Es este profesor o ése. Son estos libros o ésos. Son estas tareas o ésas. ¿Cuándo termina esto? ¿Termina esto después de la graduación? Desgraciadamente, no. Esto es a menudo una actitud para la vida.

6 Numbers as pronouns

l 1. ¿Cuántos coches tienes? Tengo uno.

2. ¿Cuántas casas tienes? Tengo una.

3. ¿Cuántas galletas quieres? Quiero diez.

4. ¿Cuántas hamburguesas quieren? Jane quiere dos y yo quiero una.

5. ¿Cuántas personas hay en tu familia? Hay tres.

6. Él tiene siete perros, pero yo sólo tengo seis.

7. Él ve muchas estrellas en el cielo, pero yo veo sólo una.

8. María conoce todas estas pinturas, pero nosotros conocemos sólo una.

9. Tengo sólo un teléfono, pero uno es mejor que nada.

10. ¿Cuántos naipes quieres? Quiero uno.

¿ 1. el séptimo

2. la segunda

3. el noveno

- 4. el quinto
- 5. la décima
- 6. el primero
- 7. la octava
- 8. la tercera
- 9. el sexto
- 10. la cuarta

- 3 1. Yo vivo en la segunda casa a la izquierda y Miguel vive en la sexta.
- 2. ¿Quién vive en la octava casa? No sé, pero Marcos vive en la séptima.
 - 3. Mi coche es el tercero a la derecha, y el coche de Ricardo es el cuarto.
 - 4. La Biblia dice que Adán es la primera persona y que Eva es la segunda.
 - 5. La primera película siempre es mejor que la segunda.
 - 6. La tercera película del actor es mejor que la cuarta.
 - 7. Su quinto libro es más interesante que el sexto.
 - 8. En España, el primer día de la semana es lunes y el séptimo es domingo.
 - 9. El octavo mes es agosto, el noveno es septiembre y el décimo es octubre.
 - 10. El primer enigma es más difícil que el segundo.
 - 11. Hoy es el primero de abril.
 - 12. La primera vez siempre es mejor que la segunda, la tercera y así sucesivamente.

4 Cuando comemos juntos, mi amigo y yo competimos para ver quién puede comer más. Por ejemplo, cuando comemos galletas, si yo como una, él come dos. Entonces yo como tres y él come cuatro. El primer participante con un plato vacío es el ganador. Esto es fácil con galletas o uvas o cerezas. Pero es muy difícil con hamburguesas. La primera está sabrosa. La segunda, también. La tercera no está mal. La cuarta es un reto. La quinta es absurda—también la sexta, la séptima y la octava. La novena es pura tortura. Y la décima es imposible. ¡Es peor con los pasteles!

7 Adjective pronouns

- 1 1. Él compra coches nuevos, pero yo siempre compro los usados.

2. Ella prefiere los hombres altos, pero yo prefiero los bajos.
 3. Ellos quieren la pregunta fácil, pero nosotros queremos la difícil.
 4. Ella cree que el hombre rubio es guapo, pero yo prefiero el moreno.
 5. La pluma azul es tuya, pero la verde es mía.
 6. Cada cliente quiere comprar un coche de lujo, pero compra el compacto.
 7. Más personas compran la alfombra gris porque la blanca siempre está sucia.
 8. Los dos vestidos son hermosos, pero el largo es más elegante.
 9. Él pone las lámparas grandes en la sala y las pequeñas en el dormitorio.
 10. La copa grande es para el vino rojo y la pequeña es para el blanco.
- 2 1. Algunas personas viven en la ciudad y algunas viven en el campo.
2. El setenta por ciento de los dentistas usan este cepillo de dientes y los demás usan un palo.
 3. No puedo decidir cuál es el mejor lavaplatos. Me gustan los dos (or ambos).
 4. Nunca voy de compras con ella. Compra todo. Es peligroso.
 5. A Diego le gustan las fiestas. Siempre es el último en salir.
 6. Mi esposo bebe (or toma) leche todo el tiempo. Por eso, compro mucha cada semana.
 7. Tengo varios libros de español. ¿Quieres uno?
 8. A Esmeralda le encantan los zapatos. Tiene muchos.
 9. En las reuniones, unas cuantas personas hablan todo el tiempo y la mayoría sufre en silencio.
 10. Marcia recibe todos los regalos y pobrecita Jan no recibe ninguno.
 11. Tenemos mucha ensalada. ¿Quieres más?
 12. Usualmente, miles de personas vienen a la ceremonia, pero este año hay obviamente menos.
 13. Los estudiantes van de excursión. Cada uno tiene una mochila.
 14. Cada chica tiene un lápiz, pero varias no tienen papel.
 15. Voy a pedir otro batido. ¿Quieres otro también?
- 3 1. A menudo el menor lleva la ropa usada.
2. Todos creen que esto es brillante.

3. Nadie va a comer esto. ¡Está mohoso!
 4. Alguien está en la cocina con Dinah.
 5. Nuestra cliente favorita es la que gasta todo su dinero en los cosméticos y la ropa.
 6. En los libros de Harry Potter, Hermione es la mayor y Harry es el menor de los tres personajes principales.
 7. Para estos puestos, los que quieren trabajar diez horas al día pueden pedir una entrevista.
 8. Muchos psicólogos estudian las diferencias entre el mayor y el menor en la familia.
 9. Oscar Wilde escribe que un cínico es el que sabe el precio de todo y el valor de nada.
 10. Todos sufren de vez en cuando, y la mayoría son más fuertes por la experiencia.
 11. Todos están aquí, pero algunos no conocen a nadie.
 12. Juan y Mateo viven juntos, pero ninguno tiene un televisor.
 13. Cualquiera puede llevar estos pantalones.
 14. Ramón da consejos a cualquiera.
 15. Hay una fiesta esta noche. Cualesquiera de ustedes (or vosotros) pueden ir conmigo.
- ‡ 1. ¿Tienes algo para mí?
2. De todas las cosas en el mundo, lo mejor es el amor.
 3. No importa si yo llevo blue-jeans. Ella siempre lleva lo mismo.
 4. ¿Cuál quieren ellos? Cualquiera. No importa.
 5. Es maravilloso cuando ustedes bailan. Lo mejor es cuando bailan el mambo.
 6. El servicio y el ambiente aquí son terribles. Pero lo peor es la comida.
 7. Él nunca trae nada a una fiesta, pero siempre come y bebe todo.
 8. Lo peor en una relación es no poder tener confianza en la otra persona.
 9. Algunas personas creen que él es muy sabio, pero la verdad es que siempre dice lo mismo.
 10. No sé nada acerca de esto.

10. NO SE HAGA ACERCA DE ESTO.

11. Cualquiera de estos coches es bueno para el invierno.

12. Estos libros son interesantes. Puedes leer cualquiera de ellos.

13. Cualquiera de estos tres está bien.

14. Cualesquiera de estos están bien.

¡ Este letrero dice: “Hoy es el primer día del resto de la vida”. Si esto es verdad, entonces, ¿qué es mañana? ¿El segundo? No puedo creer todo lo que leo. Nadie puede. Algunos creen todo. Algunas personas creen los anuncios en las contraportadas de las revistas. Supongo que algunos de estos son la verdad, pero la mayoría de estos anuncios son mentiras. ¿Quiénes son estas personas no honradas? Prometen todo y no entregan nada.

8 Relative pronouns

1. Tengo el libro que quieres.

2. Las personas que trabajan aquí son muy amables.

3. El coche que quiero es rojo.

4. Sólo miro películas que son de Europa.

5. Él cree que esta salsa está muy picante.

6. La medicina que tomo cada mañana sabe a gasolina.

7. Tienes dos libros que son buenos y dos que son malos.

8. La pintura que ves es por (or de) Francisco Goya.

9. Él no sabe que yo tengo su billetera.

10. ¿Sabes que la mantequilla es pura grasa?

11. El hombre que vive en esta casa es actor.

12. Ella siempre alquila las películas que recomiendo.

13. Ella es la vieja que vive en un zapato.

14. Los gatos que tienen muchos dedos viven en Key West, Florida.

15. Las personas que votan tienen mucho poder.

2 1. Su esposa, la cual (or la que) es linda, habla cuatro idiomas.

2. Su perro, el cual (or el que) es un perro de lana, ladra todo el tiempo.

3. Nuestra casa, la cual (or la que) tiene cien años, es conocida por los

fantasmas que viven en el desván.

4. Mis anillos, los cuales (or los que) son de plata, son de Taxco, México.

5. Nuestros libros, los cuales (or los que) todavía están en cajas, son muy valiosos.

6. El casero, el cual (or el que) también vive en este edificio, es un hombre muy extraño.

7. Los niños (or hijos) de mi vecino, los cuales (or los que) son más ruidosos que un aeropuerto, son angelitos en la iglesia.

8. La poeta, la cual (or la que) es la madre de dos hijas, escribe todos los días a la medianoche.

9. La Casa Blanca, la cual (or la que) es popular con los turistas, es el hogar del presidente de los Estados Unidos.

10. Estos vinos, los cuales (or los que) son de Francia, tienen noventa años.

11. El párrafo, el cual (or el que) acabo de leer, no tiene sentido.

12. Esta actitud de indiferencia, la cual (or la que) no puedo tolerar, es contagiosa.

3 1. Kitty es la mujer con quien vivo.

2. ¿Quién es el hombre con quien vives?

3. Éstas son las personas para quienes él trabaja.

4. El hombre a la izquierda es la persona con quien salgo.

5. Margo es la mujer para quien trabajo.

6. Francisco es el hombre en quien pienso.

7. Raúl es el chico con quien estoy enojado/enojada.

8. Bárbara es la persona por quien tengo compasión.

9. Ana es la mujer a quien veo.

10. Esos hombres son los jugadores a quienes miro.

4 1. Él nunca recuerda lo que (yo) quiero.

2. Ella siempre come lo que (yo) como.

3. En tu cumpleaños, puedes pedir lo que quieras.

4. Lo que él dice siempre es mentira.

5. ¿Oyes (tú) lo que (yo) oigo? ¿Sabes (tú) lo que (yo) sé?

6. No comprende lo que lee.
7. Algunas personas siempre hacen lo que no deben hacer.
8. ¿Sabes lo que quieres hacer este fin de semana?
9. Ella come exactamente lo que es malo para ella.
10. Lo que (tú) necesitas es un abrazo.

- 5 1. Marcos, cuya madre es dentista, quiere vender dulces.
2. El chico, cuyo libro tienes, es mi primo.
 3. El actor, cuyas películas son terribles, es muy rico.
 4. El dentista, cuyo consultorio está en la ciudad, vive en las afueras.
 5. Los niños, cuyos padres hablan sólo inglés, estudian español.
 6. Él es el hombre cuyo perro siempre roba nuestro periódico.
 7. ¿Es usted la mujer cuyo árbol es tan hermoso?
 8. ¿Son ellos los niños cuyo padre es el senador de Colorado?
 9. El estudiante, cuya maestra es de Ecuador, quiere ir a Quito este verano.
 10. La vieja señora Hubbard, cuyos gabinetes están vacíos, quiere dar un hueso a su perro.
 11. Mark, cuyo padre es presidente de un banco, no puede sumar.
 12. Lilia, cuya tienda es muy popular, es mi mejor amiga.

- 5 1. que
2. lo que
 3. que
 4. cuyo
 5. a quien
 6. con quienes
 7. cuya
 8. Lo que
 9. que
 10. lo que
 11. lo que
 12. ----

12. que
13. a quien
14. lo que
15. cuyo

7 Cabo San Lucas, que (or el cual or el que) está en la punta sureña de Baja California, es un lugar maravilloso para vacaciones tranquilas. El área, que (or la cual or la que) es principalmente en el desierto, tiene muchos resorts elegantes que (or los cuales or los que) tienen piscinas, restaurantes, bares, tiendas y clubes. En su mayor parte, usted puede hacer lo que quiera en la soledad de su habitación. Hay un centro, el cual (or que or el que) es algo pequeño, que tiene una marina, la que (or que or la cual) tiene muchos barcos para la pesca. Los turistas que quieren ir de pesca pueden alquilar un barco con un guía. Cualquier persona cuya idea de diversión es (el) calor y (el) sol puede estar muy contenta por (or durante) una semana en Cabo San Lucas.

9 Direct object pronouns

1. lo
2. la
3. los
4. la
5. la
6. los
7. la
8. los
9. lo
10. lo
11. lo
12. la
13. los
14. las
15. la

2 1. Te amo. or Te quiero.

2. Lo amo. or Lo quiero.
3. Él me ama. or Él me quiere.
4. Te veo.
5. Lo conozco. or La conozco.
6. Ella lo ve.
7. Lo bebo.
8. La tengo.
9. Lo tienes.
10. Ella los tiene.
11. Me amas. or Me quieres.
12. La amo. or La quiero.
13. Ellos nos aman. or Ellos nos quieren.
14. Me ves.
15. Me conocéis.
16. La vemos.
17. La comen.
18. Lo quiero.
19. La queremos.
20. Las tenemos.

3 1. La compro en... (Answer will vary.)

2. Los compro en... (Answer will vary.) 3. Lo estudio en... (Answer will vary.)

4. Sí, lo conozco.

5. Sí, lo tomo.

6. Sí, la comprendo.

7. Sí, la leo.

8. Sí, lo leo.

9. Sí, la hago.

10. Sí, la conozco.

11. Sí, las veo.

12. Sí, lo conozco.

12. Sí, lo como.

13. Sí, las miro.

14. Sí, los leo.

¶ 1. No lo tengo.

2. Ella no la ve.

3. No lo conozco.

4. No me conoces.

5. Ellos no la compran.

6. Él no lo escribe.

7. Ellos no los leen.

8. Ella no lo gana.

9. No lo llevo.

10. No te vemos.

11. No la tienes.

12. Ellos no lo ven.

13. Él no me conoce.

14. Ellos no nos conocen.

15. No lo usamos.

16. Ella no lo lee.

17. No las cantamos.

18. Ustedes no lo tienen.

19. Nunca (or Jamás) los llevas.

20. Nunca (or Jamás) nos ves.

¶ 1. lavarla

2. comerla

3. escribirlo

4. limpiarla

5. tocarlas

6. bailarlo

7. construirlos

7. CONSTRUIRLOS

8. verlo

9. conocerla

10. oírla

11. verlo

12. prepararlas

13. oírla

14. conocerlos

15. visitarlo

3 1. Él me quiere ver.

2. Ella lo quiere besar.

3. Los debes comer.

4. Ellos lo tienen que hacer.

5. Las queremos conocer.

6. Ella tiene que cantarla.

7. Debo leerlo.

8. Quiero verte mañana.

9. Ellos necesitan tenerlo para mañana.

10. Juan puede vernos.

7 1. ¿Quieres verla conmigo?

2. ¿Vas a comerlo?

3. ¿Debemos beberla ahora o debemos ponerla en el refrigerador?

4. ¿Podemos comerlo o debemos tirarlo a la basura?

5. No debes ponerlos en la sala.

6. Si no quieres tenerla, debes ponerla en la caja y devolverla.

7. No puedo llevarlos a una fiesta formal.

8. ¿Por qué no puedes verme?

9. No tienes que hacerlo hoy.

10. ¿Quieres abrirlas en la mañana y cerrarlas en la noche?

1. No los quiero ver esta noche.
2. No la debes devolver.
3. ¿Por qué no lo puedes decir?
4. No la vamos a ver en la biblioteca.
5. No las puede tirar a la basura.
6. ¿Cuándo las puedo ver?
7. Si no lo quieres oír, puedes apagar la radio.
8. ¿Dónde los quieres guardar? ¿Los podemos poner aquí?
9. ¿La van a vender (ustedes)?
10. ¡No, no lo puedes golpear!

9.9 Yo sé que Marcos tiene mi dinero, mis zapatos, y la mesa y las sillas para mi comedor. Él cree que no sé esto, pero sí, lo sé. Primero, el dinero. Sé que lo tiene porque puedo verlo (or lo puedo ver) en aquella gaveta. Segundo, los zapatos. Los necesito porque si no los llevo, no puedo correr rápido ni saltar bien. Tercero, la mesa. No sé por qué la tiene ni por qué la quiere. Quiero ponerla (or La quiero poner) en mi nueva casa. Él cree que las sillas son suyas, pero no es verdad. Son mías. Y las quiero ahora.

10 Indirect object pronouns

- .1 1. a story, me
2. nothing, him
3. food, us
4. meal, us
5. us, friends
6. it (*understood*), you
7. ring, you
8. drinks, everyone
9. letter, note, *etc.* (*understood*), me
10. diamonds, her
- .2 1. me
2. nos
3. le

4. Les
5. le
6. Le
7. Le
8. Le
9. Me
10. nos
11. les
12. Os
13. Les
14. te
15. le

.3 1. Le digo la verdad.

2. Él me dice mentiras todo el tiempo.
3. Le damos las flores.
4. Les escribo una carta cada semana.
5. Ellos nos escriben cada mes.
6. Ella le canta una canción.
7. John es mi ayudante y le dicto una carta.
8. Siempre le digo que es bonita.
9. Les envío (or mando) una tarjeta para su aniversario.
10. ¿Qué te dan para tu cumpleaños cada año?

.4 1. Él no me dice nada.

2. Yo no le digo nada.
3. Ellos nunca le envían nada porque no saben su dirección.
4. No le doy dinero.
5. El mesero (or El camarero) no te canta “Feliz cumpleaños.”
6. ¿Por qué no le dicen la verdad?
7. ¿Por qué no os compran una computadora?

8. Les sirvo la cena, pero nunca me dan las gracias.
9. Si no me hacen preguntas, no les digo mentiras.
10. No les prestamos dinero.

.5 1. darle

2. decirles
3. prestarme
4. alquilarles
5. decirte
6. escribirle
7. cantaros
8. decirnos
9. mostrarle
10. contarnos
11. diseñarme
12. prepararles
13. decirles
14. venderles
15. servirnos

.6 1. Le quiero dar un regalo.

2. Él me necesita decir la verdad.
3. Le debemos escribir una carta.
4. Nos debes escribir más a menudo.
5. Les tienen que decir la verdad.
6. Debemos darles aceite de oliva.
7. Él quiere comprarle un diamante.
8. Cuando él viene a nuestra casa, siempre quiere traernos algo.
9. Puedo enviarte (or mandarte) estos floreros por correo.
10. Necesitáis decirle algo.

.7 1. ¿Quieres traerme un gatito? ¿Me quieres traer un gatito?

2. No vamos a mostrarles nuestra casa nueva. No les vamos a mostrar nuestra casa nueva.
3. ¿Quieres venderles estas pinturas? ¿Les quieres vender estas pinturas?
4. ¿Quién va a pagarme el dinero? ¿Quién me va a pagar el dinero?
5. ¿Puedes enviarnos los muebles para el martes? ¿Nos puedes enviar los muebles para el martes?
6. El artista no puede pintarle un cuadro para junio. El artista no le puede pintar un cuadro para junio.
7. No voy a lavarte la ropa. No te voy a lavar la ropa.
8. No queremos decirles (or contarles) las malas noticias. No les queremos decir (or contar) las malas noticias.
9. ¿Cuándo podéis construirmos el edificio? ¿Cuándo nos podéis construir el edificio?
10. ¿Debes leerle tal carta? ¿Le debes leer tal carta?

.8 1. Le digo a Juan todo.

2. Quiero decirle todo a él. or Le quiero decir todo a él.
3. Ella le escribe a su tía cada mes.
4. ¿Por qué le traes tanto a Mateo?
5. Ella le da los documentos a su abogado.
6. Ella tiene que darle el dinero a la policía. or Ella le tiene que dar el dinero a la policía.
7. ¡Margarita nos regala a nosotros un televisor!
8. ¡Oliver quiere regalarme a mí un reloj de Cartier! or ¡Oliver me quiere regalar a mí un reloj de Cartier!
9. ¿Qué les haces a tus amigos? Les hago una torta.
10. Les traigo a ellos un periódico cada mañana.
11. Usualmente les compro a ellas ropa para Navidad.
12. ¿Qué debemos comprarle a ella? or ¿Qué le debemos comprar a ella?
13. Romeo le envía (or manda) rosas a Julieta en el día de San Valentín.
14. ¿Van a enviarles (or mandarles) algo a ustedes este año? or ¿Les van a enviar (or mandar) algo a ustedes este año?

15. George Washington no puede decirle una mentira a nadie. or George Washington no le puede decir una mentira a nadie.

.9 1. Sí, me gusta la leche. or No, no me gusta la leche.

2. Sí, me gustan los dramas de Shakespeare. or No, no me gustan los dramas de Shakespeare.

3. Sí, me gusta comer en el coche. or No, no me gusta comer en el coche.

4. Sí, me gusta limpiar la casa. or No, no me gusta limpiar la casa.

5. Sí, me gustan los platos exóticos. or No, no me gustan los platos exóticos.

6. Sí, me gustan las películas de horror. or No, no me gustan las películas de horror.

7. Sí, me gusta correr. or No, no me gusta correr.

8. Sí, me gusta memorizar los verbos españoles. or No, no me gusta memorizar los verbos españoles.

9. Sí, me gustan los mosquitos. or No, no me gustan los mosquitos.

10. Sí, me gusta conducir en la hora punta. or No, no me gusta conducir en la hora punta.

.10 1. Me fascina este libro.

2. No quiero nada más. Me basta esta comida. or No quiero nada más. Esta comida me basta.

3. A Mikey le gusta todo.

4. Me disgusta esta película. or Esta película me disgusta.

5. Me duelen los ojos.

6. A él no le importa nada y no le interesa nada. ¡Qué triste! or A él nada le importa y nada le interesa. ¡Qué triste!

7. Me falta un botón en mi camisa.

8. ¡Nos encanta tu nueva casa!

9. ¿Qué te molesta?

10. Estas revistas me parecen absurdas.

11. Después de los días de fiesta, a ellos no les sobra dinero.

12. A él le disgusta el café, pero a mí me encanta.

13. Me vuelve loco/loca (or encanta) esta obra de teatro.

14. No me caen bien las galletas con pasas.

15. A ella le encantan los deportes, pero a él le disgustan.

.11 Tengo un nuevo vecino. Él vive al lado de mí. Él me parece muy amable. Me gustan los vecinos si no me molestan. Puedo hacerle una torta o puedo escribirle una nota que dice, “¡Bienvenido al vecindario!” Puedo verlo ahora. ¡Estos prismáticos son fantásticos! Puedo verlo todo ahora. Pienso (or Creo) que voy a mirarlo por un rato. Nadie me ve cuando uso mis prismáticos porque apago todas las luces. Me encantan estos prismáticos. No sé lo que debo hacer. Voy a preguntarle a mi tía lo que piensa. Ella siempre me da buenos consejos.

11 Reflexive object pronouns

.1 1. Me ducho.

2. Me baño.

3. Te duchas cada día.

4. Él se afeita cada mañana.

5. Ella se cepilla los dientes tres veces al día.

6. Nos cepillamos los dientes.

7. Ellos se afeitan dos veces al día.

8. Él se lava el pelo.

9. Me lavo la cara.

10. Te secas el pelo.

11. Usted se seca con una toalla.

12. Me peino (el pelo) a menudo.

13. Ella se peina (el pelo) casi nunca.

14. Me peso en la báscula de baño.

15. Ella se pesa dos veces al día.

.2 1. Cuando me pruebo ropa nueva, me veo (or me miro) en el espejo.

2. ¿A qué hora te acuestas y a qué hora te levantas?

3. Normalmente las personas se casan durante los fines de semana.

4. Me enfermo (or Me pongo enfermo/enferma) cuando como comida que tiene mucha grasa.

5. Me voy al trabajo cada mañana a las ocho.
6. Me ducho, me cepillo los dientes, me seco el pelo, me visto y después me voy al trabajo.
7. Me pongo enfermo/enferma cuando veo un pelo en la comida.
8. Miss America se desmaya cuando se pone la corona.
9. Cada noche me desvisto, me pongo el pijama, me acuesto y me duermo.
10. Cuando Laura se queda en un hotel, se preocupa por la seguridad de su familia.

.3 1. me

2. se
3. nos
4. me
5. se
6. se
7. se
8. me
9. te
10. os
11. me
12. se, se

.4 1. Después de vestirme, me miro en el espejo.

2. Antes de irnos, nos ponemos los abrigos, las manoplas y los sombreros.
3. Después de bañarme, me pongo la bata y me relajo.
4. En vez de ducharme, voy a bañarme esta noche.
5. Este jabón es el mejor para lavarse la cara.
6. Uso este champú para lavarme el pelo.
7. Cuando me quedo en un hotel, siempre pido una llamada para despertarme.
8. Él toma una pastilla cada noche para dormirse.
9. Algunas personas meditan para relajarse.
10. Necesitáis una navaja y una hoja para afeitaros.

- .5
1. Para nuestra luna de miel, queremos quedarnos en un hotel elegante.
 2. ¿Dónde van a quedarse en París?
 3. Tengo mucho calor. Voy a quitarme el suéter.
 4. Tengo mucho frío. Tengo que ponerme el abrigo.
 5. Nadie quiere enfermarse, pero desgraciadamente esto ocurre.
 6. A nuestro perro le gusta bañarse en la piscina de nuestros vecinos.
 7. Si quieres lavarte el pelo, hay champú en el gabinete.
 8. Si quiere afeitarse, el conserje puede darle una navaja y algunas hojas.
 9. Si quieren ponerse bien, tienen que tomar este caldo de pollo.
 10. Vas a enfermarte si comes esa carne cruda.

.6 “¡Él ya no se baña nunca! Es absolutamente terrible.” Mi vecina me dice todo, y hoy ella se queja de su esposo. Es una mujer fastidiosa y se queja todo el tiempo. Me dice que debo lavarme el pelo más a menudo. Le digo que eso es mi problema y que ella debe callarse. Me dice que no puede callarse cuando nadie en su familia ni se baña ni se ducha. Me dice que después de acostarse, no puede dormirse porque se preocupa por todas estas personas que no se lavan. Yo le digo que (ella) puede comprarse o un bote de Lysol o una manguera.

12 Double-object pronoun order: RID

- .1
1. Él me lo da.
 2. Ella te lo dice.
 3. Te lo damos.
 4. Te la escribo.
 5. Él nos los envía.
 6. Te la cantamos.
 7. ¿Por qué me lo das?
 8. ¿Quién te lo tiene?
 9. ¿Cuándo me lo haces?
 10. ¿Por qué nos lo dices?
 11. Me la preparo.
 12. Ella se las compra.

12. Ella se las compra.

- .2**
1. Él se la canta.
 2. Se lo decimos.
 3. Se los compras.
 4. Se lo escribo.
 5. (Él) Se los envía.
 6. Se lo digo.
 7. (Él) Se la vende.
 8. Se las das.
 9. Nadie se lo dice.
 10. ¿Por qué se lo dices?
 11. Se las traemos.
 12. Ella se lo cocina.
 13. Se las hago.
 14. ¿Se los haces?
 15. ¿Quién se lo da?

- .3**
1. Ella no me lo dice.
 2. No se lo digo.
 3. No nos las compramos.
 4. Ellos no nos la envían a tiempo.
 5. Ella no nos lo hace cada día.
 6. No se la doy.
 7. Él no me lo paga en efectivo.
 8. Él no me lo da a tiempo.
 9. ¿Por qué no se la envías mañana?
 10. ¿Se las compras cada día?
 11. Nunca me las compro.
 12. Nunca se los decimos.

- .4**
1. Quiero decírtelo. Te lo quiero decir.
 2. Quiero comprártela. Te la quiero comprar.

2. ¿Quieres comprártela? ¿Te la quieres comprar?
 3. Tienes que dármelo. Me lo tienes que dar.
 4. Tenemos que vendértelos. Te los tenemos que vender.
 5. Tenemos que vendérselo. Se lo tenemos que vender.
 6. Ellos deben comprártelas. Ellos te las deben comprar.
 7. Ellos deben comprárselo. Ellos se lo deben comprar.
 8. Ella necesita enviármela. Ella me la necesita enviar.
 9. (Ustedes) Tienen que darnosla. (Ustedes) Nos la tienen que dar.
 10. Debo traérselo. Se lo debo traer.
 11. Ellos deben traérmelas. Ellos me las deben traer.
 12. Ella quiere cantárnosla. Ella nos la quiere cantar.
 13. Puedes enviármelo por correo. Me lo puedes enviar por correo.
 14. Él puede pagártela en efectivo. Él te la puede pagar en efectivo.
 15. Quiero pagároslos con un cheque. Os los quiero pagar con un cheque.
- .5**
1. ¿Puedes hacérmelo? ¿Me lo puedes hacer?
 2. No, no puedo hacértelo. No, no te lo puedo hacer.
 3. ¿Tenemos que decírsela? ¿Se la tenemos que decir?
 4. ¿Cuándo quieres dárselas? ¿Cuándo se las quieres dar?
 5. No necesitas pagármelo ahora. No me lo necesitas pagar ahora.
 6. Ellos no pueden vendértelo en los Estados Unidos. Ellos no te lo pueden vender en los Estados Unidos.
 7. No podemos vendérsela a este precio. No se la podemos vender a este precio.
 8. ¿Cuándo quieres decírmelo? ¿Cuándo me lo quieres decir?
 9. ¿No vas a traérselo hoy? ¿No nos lo vas a traer hoy?
 10. ¿No pueden enviárnoslas por correo? ¿No nos las pueden enviar por correo?
- .6** Cada año recibo muchos regalos para mi cumpleaños. Tengo muchos amigos que tienen tiendas y (ellos) siempre me regalan (or dan) lo que venden o lo que hacen. Y para sus cumpleaños yo les doy regalos también. Mi amigo Merlín vende flores, y me las regala (or da). Manolo vende zapatos y me los regala (or

da). Juan vende café y me lo regala (or da). Vidal vende champú y me lo regala (or da). Paloma hace perfume y me lo envía (or manda) porque vive en España. Donna hace vestidos y me los envía (or manda). Elsa hace joyas y siempre me hace algo especial para mi cumpleaños. Este año quiero un avión privado. ¿Quién va a regalármelo? (or ¿Quién me lo va a regalar?)

13 Reciprocal pronouns

- .1
1. Nos, We know each other very well.
 2. se, They love each other a lot.
 3. Os, You all see each other through the window.
 4. Se, Do you know each other?
 5. Se, They (or You) kiss each other every morning.
 6. nos, Every day we tell each other "I love you."
 7. se, When they are angry, they don't speak (or talk) to each other.
 8. Os, Do you all visit each other often?
 9. se, se, They fight (with each other) a lot, because they hate each other.
 10. Nos, We speak (or talk) to each other on the telephone three times every week.
 11. se, They want to know each other better.
 12. nos, We can't see each other as often as we want.
- .2
1. Nos escribimos cartas largas cada semana.
 2. ¿Cuándo os veis?
 3. ¿Por qué se gritan tanto?
 4. Los tórtolos se cantan en la copa del árbol.
 5. Nos compramos regalos cada diciembre.
 6. Los cinco amigos se encuentran en el gimnasio cada viernes por la tarde.
 7. No podemos hablarnos porque mi teléfono no funciona.
 8. No deben decirse todo. Él no puede guardar un secreto.
 9. Podéis miraros ahora.
 10. Mis vecinos se gritan cada sábado por la noche.

.3 Voy a la reunión de mi escuela secundaria en dos semanas. Estoy muy ilusionada porque Enrique va a asistir. Yo sé esto porque mi mejor amiga, Laura, es la secretaria de la clase. Ella y yo nos hablamos cada semana y (ella) me dice (or cuenta) todo. Estas reuniones son delicadas. Queremos vernos, pero al mismo tiempo no queremos vernos. O, tal vez, queremos vernos en el pasado, lo cual ya no existe. Es especialmente difícil para las parejas románticas. Unas parejas previas se ven después de muchos años y es maravilloso. Pero hay otras ex-parejas que se ven y es una experiencia horrible.

14 The pronoun se and the passive voice

.1 1. vende

2. come

3. hacen

4. bailan

5. cultivan

6. exportan

7. baila

8. fabrican

9. liman

10. fabrica

.2 *Answers may vary.*

1. Se habla español aquí.

2. Se hablan español y francés aquí.

3. Se venden zapatos allí.

4. No se venden fuegos artificiales a los adolescentes. or Los fuegos artificiales no se venden a los adolescentes.

5. No se permite la entrada antes de las diez. or La entrada no se permite antes de las diez.

6. No se permiten las cámaras en el teatro. or Las cámaras no se permiten en el teatro.

7. El oro y las joyas no se consideran buenas inversiones.

8. Las tiendas y los museos se cierran los martes.

9. El banco se cierra a las dos y media.

10. Se fabrican piñatas en esta fábrica.

.3 *Answers may vary.*

1. Se debe pagar los impuestos cada abril.

2. No se puede estar en dos lugares al mismo tiempo.

3. Se necesita cambiar el aceite en el coche cada tres mil millas.

4. No se debe culpar a los otros (or a los demás) por los resultados de sus acciones.

5. Se debe hacer ejercicio y meditar diariamente.

6. Se debe hacer más claros estos mapas. ¡No se puede leer esto!

7. No se puede extraer la sangre de un nabo.

8. No se puede juzgar un libro por su portada.

9. Se debe cepillar los dientes después de comer.

10. Se puede nadar y jugar al tenis en este club.

11. Para bailar La Bamba, se necesita una poca de gracia.

12. Nunca se explicaron los OVNI's.

13. ¿Se puede entrar?

14. En esta tienda se paga un precio fijo.

15. Se dice que se debe mirar antes de saltar.

.4 1. El centro comercial se cierra a las nueve y media.

2. Me enoja (or Me pongo enojado/enojada) cuando pago siete dólares para ver una película y el proyector se descompone.

3. Usualmente, las bombillas se queman después de cien horas.

4. Cuando se estropea un coche en la autopista, es un catástrofe para todos.

5. ¿A qué hora se abre ese restaurante?

6. El sol se pone a las ocho y media de la noche en el verano.

7. Con este aparato, las luces se encienden y se apagan automáticamente.

8. Después de los días de fiesta, se rompen millones de juguetes.

9. Cuando ella canta, se quiebran todos los vasos.

10. Los museos se cierran a las seis en punto.

... Los museos se cuentan a las decenas en esta ciudad.

.5 Quiero ir a Madrid para mis próximas vacaciones. Tengo un folleto conmigo ahora. ¡A ver! ¿Qué se puede hacer en Madrid? Se dice aquí que el Prado es uno de los mejores museos del mundo y que se puede pasar varios días explorando sus tesoros. Se dice que en Madrid el sistema del metro es muy bueno, así que no se necesita alquilar un coche. Se puede tomar el metro a todos los sitios en la ciudad. Si se va a un buen restaurante en Madrid, se puede probar el cochinillo asado. También, El Retiro es un parque precioso y se puede alquilar barquitos para recorrer el estanque. Se puede asistir a las corridas y se puede bailar hasta las cinco de la mañana. ¡Se puede hacer de todo en esta ciudad maravillosa!

II PREPOSITIONS

15 Prepositions and prepositional phrases

.1

1. Él siempre habla acerca de su novia.
2. Prefiero el café con leche y azúcar.
3. Él prefiere el té sin azúcar.
4. *Don Quijote* es la mejor novela del mundo, según José.
5. Además de flores, su novio le da dulces en cada cita.
6. La espalda del director está contra la pared.
7. Este libro es sobre George Washington.
8. Ellos no escriben mucho acerca de sus problemas.
9. ¿Quieres la pizza con carne o sin carne?
10. Me gusta todo aquí excepto (or salvo or menos) los zapatos.
11. Su tesis es sobre el arte de Roma.
12. Según Julia, sus amigos no saben nada acerca de la música clásica.
13. Quiero todo contra la pared, menos (or salvo or excepto) el podio.
14. Tienes que servir las bebidas además de la comida.
15. La biblioteca no tiene nada sobre la historia de la pizza.

.2 1. Hay un libro encima de la mesa.

2. Juan está a la derecha de mí y Feline está a la izquierda de Elena.

2. Juan está a la derecha de mi y Felipe está a la izquierda de Elena.
 3. ¿Vives al lado de nuestro restaurante?
 4. Cada primavera sembramos flores delante de la casa.
 5. Necesitamos más iluminación sobre los cuadros.
 6. La gente a través del país mira los juegos olímpicos en la televisión.
 7. Mi canción favorita es “Cerca de ti.”
 8. Muchas personas quieren (or Mucha gente quiere) vivir lejos del aeropuerto.
 9. ¿Sabes que hay un tigre debajo de tu cama?
 10. ¿Por qué hay tantos perros fuera de tu casa?
 11. ¿Quién está en la cocina con Dinah?
 12. ¿Qué tienes dentro de la boca?
 13. Él trabaja en el banco.
 14. Ellos están en el banco.
 15. No hay nada en la televisión esta noche.
 16. No hay nada entre nosotros.
 17. ¿Quién está detrás de ti?
 18. La obra es en el teatro.
- .3**
1. a lo largo de
 2. más allá de
 3. alrededor de
 4. por
 5. hacia
 6. a lo largo de
 7. hacia
 8. por
 9. más allá de
 10. alrededor de
- .4**
1. Corro alrededor del lago cada mañana.
 2. ¿Caminas (or Andas) a lo largo del bulevar?

3. El detective busca por la casa.
 4. Él siempre mira hacia sus metas.
 5. Superman puede volar por el aire.
 6. Cada noche, caminan (or andan) por el centro comercial.
 7. Si miras más allá de ese árbol, puedes ver la montaña rusa.
 8. ¿Quieres caminar (or andar) alrededor de la cuadra conmigo?
 9. No puedes ir más allá del final de esta cuadra.
 10. Podemos conducir hacia el río y después caminar (or andar) a lo largo de la senda.
 11. Nancy Kerrigan puede patinar hacia adelante y hacia atrás.
 12. Superman puede volar, pero no vuela hacia atrás.
- .5**
1. Iowa está al norte de Missouri.
 2. Arkansas está al sur de Missouri.
 3. Kansas está al oeste de Missouri.
 4. Illinois está al este de Missouri.
 5. Michigan está al nordeste (or noreste) de Missouri.
 6. Nebraska está al noroeste de Missouri.
 7. Oklahoma está al suroeste (or sudoeste) de Missouri.
 8. Tennessee está al sureste (or sudeste) de Missouri.
 9. Louisiana está al sur de Missouri.
 10. Minnesota está al norte de Missouri.
- .6**
1. A causa de (or Por) este resfriado, no puedo ir al cine con mis amigos.
 2. Leo (or Estoy leyendo) un libro de (or por) John Steinbeck.
 3. Este libro es para ustedes.
 4. ¡Saludos desde Cancún!
 5. Vamos al centro comercial. ¿Quieres ir con nosotros?
 6. Estas perlas son de Japón.
 7. Todos mis amigos de la universidad están aquí.
 8. ¿Qué quieren de mí?
 9. No voy a ir a la escuela.

9. NO tengo nada para ti.
10. Él me llama desde Alemania cada semana.
11. Por (or A causa de) su actitud y amargura, ella no tiene amigos.
12. La novela *Les Misérables* es por (or de) Victor Hugo.
13. Marchamos (or Estamos marchando) a Pretoria.
14. ¡Uno de ellos va a ganar el premio gordo!
15. Estoy cansado/cansada, y por esta razón voy a dormir una siesta.

.7 1. después de

2. durante
3. hasta
4. Antes de
5. desde
6. a
7. después de
8. durante
9. antes de
10. durante
11. después de
12. por

.8 1. No tienes que estar aquí hasta mañana.

2. Necesito limpiar el garaje antes del invierno.
3. Hace frío, ¿no? Sí. Desde el martes.
4. Algunas personas creen que los fantasmas viven después de la muerte.
5. Después de la cena, siempre lavamos los platos.
6. ¿Qué quieres hacer durante nuestro descanso?
7. Usualmente, ¿qué haces por la tarde?
8. ¿Qué quieres hacer antes del baile?
9. Usualmente hablamos durante los anuncios.
10. Él va a trabajar aquí hasta marzo.
11. ¿No tienes leche? No. No desde el sábado.

11. ¿NO tienes leche? NO. NO desde el sábado.
12. Ellos trabajan de lunes a viernes.
13. Podemos mirar la película e ir al restaurante después de mirarla.
14. Siempre pico las cebollas antes de cocinarlas.

16 Para and por

.1 1. g

2. b

3. f

4. c

5. j

6. f

7. d

8. a

9. i

10. e

11. j

12. d

13. i

14. j

15. b

16. e

17. h

18. c

19. a

20. i

.2 1. Esta casa es perfecta para nosotros.

2. Necesitamos una mesa nueva para el comedor.

3. Para algunas personas, no es importante tener un coche.

4. Estos zapatos son para bailar el tango.

5. Tienes que leer este libro para el jueves.
6. Él mira la televisión para evitar sus problemas.
7. Salgo para África mañana.
8. Estudio para mago.
9. Él es muy cortés para un adolescente.
10. ¿Puedes escribir la carta para el martes?
11. Esta comida es para el gato.
12. Para él, el invierno es maravilloso, pero para mí, el verano es la mejor estación.
13. Ella trabaja mucho para sacar buenas notas.
14. ¿A qué hora sales para el trabajo?
15. Estas manzanas no son para comer.

.3 1. a

2. j

3. m

4. d

5. c

6. o

7. n

8. b

9. f

10. g

11. e

12. l

13. i

14. h

15. b

16. d

17. o

18. m

19. k

20. e

21. h

22. j

23. i

24. f

25. g

- .4
1. Vamos a la escuela (or al colegio) por autobús.
 2. Puedes tener esos zapatos por diez dólares.
 3. Él tiene por lo menos veinte gatos.
 4. Cuando viajo, siempre camino por la ciudad e investigo todo.
 5. Leemos el periódico por treinta minutos cada mañana.
 6. Juanita está enferma hoy. ¿Puedes trabajar por ella?
 7. Voy al supermercado por leche, mantequilla y huevos.
 8. Cada lunes por la noche él mira (el) fútbol americano en la televisión.
 9. Por sus alergias, no puede tocar el gato.
 10. Gracias por nada.
 11. Por dar tanto a los otros (or a los demás), ella merece una medalla.
 12. El noventa por ciento de todos los dentistas dicen que esta pasta de dientes es horrible.
 13. Él viene por mi casa de vez en cuando.
 14. Sólo tengo estimación por ti.
 15. Ahora entiendo las diferencias entre *por* y *para* por primera vez.
 16. Puedes enviarme los contratos por fax.
- .5
1. para, recipient of an item or action
 2. para, comparison to a certain standard
 3. por, expresses thanks
 4. por, duration of time
 5. por, indicates motion, through, around
 6. por, time limit of an action

6. para, time limit of an action
7. para, recipient of an item or action
8. por, por, por, used before periods of the 24-hour day
9. para, destination
10. por, por, means of transportation
11. por, expresses exchange, price
12. para, expresses final destination
13. por, idiomatic expression
14. por, tells why something is a certain way
15. para, in order to do something
16. por, on behalf of
17. por, expresses *per*
18. por, idiomatic expression
19. para, expresses an opinion
20. por, shows point of temporary stop
21. por, shows emotion
22. para, in order to do something, for the purpose of
23. por, expresses “because of”
24. por, tells why something is a certain way
25. por, expresses means of information
26. por, idiomatic expression
27. para, in order to
28. por, used before periods in the 24-hour day
29. por, expresses *per*
30. para, time limit of an action

.6 *Answers will vary.*

1. a. You can have my shirt for your skirt. Destination: Figuratively, “to go with”
- b. You can have my shirt for your skirt. Substitution: An equal exchange
2. a. We’re going to their house tonight. Destination: The implication is that we will stay for a while.
- b. We’re going by their house tonight. Movement: The implication is that their house is a temporary stop.

3. a. I have lots of shampoo and soap samples for the trip. Deadline: The trip is in the future.
b. I have lots of shampoo and soap samples because of the trip. Motivation: “Because of”
4. a. Martin and Dorothy have many gifts for Daisy and for Lily. Destination: Recipient of an action—The gifts are *for* them.
b. Martin and Dorothy have a lot of love for Daisy and for Lily. Emotions: Tells of their feelings
5. a. Judith dances for Twyla. Destination: Twyla is the recipient of Judith’s dancing.
b. Judith dances for Twyla. Substitution: Judith is dancing on behalf of Twyla, who can’t dance for some reason.
6. a. We’re driving to the park. Destination: The park is our final destination.
b. We’re driving through (or throughout) the park. Movement: We’re moving in (or within) an area.
7. a. These creams are for allergies. Destination: Allergies are a figurative destination.
b. These allergies are because of the creams. Motivation: Tells why the allergies exist
8. a. In my opinion, this soup is spoiled (or bad). Standard: Personal opinion
b. Because of me this soup is spoiled (or bad). Motivation: Tells why the soup has gone bad
- 16.7** Ésta es una historia para todos. Hay una mujer que vive en Texas. Ella trabaja para una compañía grande, pero trabaja por muy poco dinero. Necesita más dinero para (la) comida y (la) ropa. Cada viernes por la tarde, cuando compra gasolina, paga dos dólares adicionales por billetes de la lotería. Ella escoge los números de la lotería por las edades de amigos y por fechas especiales. Esta semana, por primera vez, ella gana. Gana mil millones de dólares. Es suficiente dinero para comprar todo lo que quiere. Primero, ella compra regalos para todos sus amigos. Por supuesto, ellos le dicen: “Gracias por estos regalos.” Normalmente, ella no paga más de cincuenta dólares por un vestido; sin embargo, por ganar la lotería, mañana va para París para comprar un vestido por cincuenta mil dólares. ¿Estás feliz por ella?

17 Prepositions and verbs

- .1 1. Agradezco todo.
2. ¿Qué buscas? Busco mis anteojos.

3. ¿Dónde debemos colgar nuestros abrigos?
 4. Me gusta escuchar la música clásica.
 5. Puedes apagar las luces porque nos acostamos (or vamos a acostarnos) ahora.
 6. La niñera recoge los juguetes.
 7. Él borra todos sus errores.
 8. Esta noche Carlota va a salir con Guillermo. Está muy ilusionada.
 9. Yo siempre saco la basura. Tú debes sacar la basura de vez en cuando.
 10. El abogado entrega la evidencia al juez.
 11. Los trapos empapan el aceite.
 12. El cartero siempre pisa las rosas.
 13. Necesito más dinero. Voy a pedir un aumento mañana.
 14. ¿Por cuánto tiempo tenemos que esperar el autobús?
 15. Puedes encender las luces aquí y apagar las luces allá.
- .2**
1. Vamos a conducir (or manejar) a Vermont en vez de (or en lugar de) volar.
 2. Antes de comprar los huevos, debes mirar dentro del cartón.
 3. Siempre me siento mejor después de hacer ejercicio.
 4. Además de poder volar, Superman puede ver a través de las paredes.
 5. Pienso en escribir una novela.
 6. Para llegar al banco, debes doblar a la derecha en la avenida Park.
 7. ¿Quieres nadar en vez de (or en lugar de) jugar al golf?
 8. Ella siempre come diez tacos después de nadar.
 9. ¿Qué tienes que hacer antes de salir?
 10. Voy a una conferencia sobre usar computadoras.
 11. ¡Además de hervir el agua, esta estufa puede hervir la leche!
 12. John tiene que tomar otras tres clases para graduarse.
- .3**
1. Esto me suena a mentira.
 2. Ella rompe a llorar cada vez que recuerda el dolor de su niñez.
 3. Él va a renunciar a su trabajo porque su compañía va a empezar a recortar

el personal.

4. Tarde o temprano, tienes que resignarte al hecho de que algunas personas no son honradas.

5. No puedes obligarnos a hacer nada que no queremos hacer.

6. Benjamín da cuerda a su reloj cada día a las nueve de la mañana.

7. La Sra. Dalí anima a sus hijos a estudiar las bellas artes.

8. En esta casa nos sentamos a cenar a las siete en punto.

9. ¿A qué hora subimos al tren?

10. Esta rana sabe a un sapo.

11. Mateo dice que la carne de culebra sabe a pollo.

12. Oscar Wilde dice que puede resistirse a todo salvo a la tentación.

13. En esta sección del libro, aprendemos a usar los verbos que toman la preposición *a*.

14. Algunos atletas se acostumbran a recibir y a gastar mucho dinero.

15. Ricardo no se dispone a darnos nada hoy. No está de humor.

.4 1. Puedes contar conmigo, pero, ¿puedo contar contigo?

2. Cada miércoles, me encuentro con Kay para cenar y (para) conversar.

3. En la película *Spiderman*, Peter Parker (Spiderman) sale con Mary Jane Watson.

4. Me asusto con la oscuridad durante una tormenta.

5. Es trágico, pero a veces una persona necesita romper con su familia.

6. El egoísta sueña con ser famoso, popular y rico.

7. No me asocio con compañías que venden tabaco.

8. De vez en cuando me equivoco con las personas.

9. Siempre nos divertimos con nuestros vecinos.

10. Ella se enfada (or se enoja) conmigo cuando llego tarde.

11. José no se trata con la familia de su esposa.

12. Si limpias la bañera con Brillo, vas a dañarla.

13. De vez en cuando me doy con alguien que verdaderamente me inspira.

14. Si Juan no tiene cuidado, va a tropezarse con la pared.

15. Los domingos por la mañana, me contento a menudo con zumo (or jugo) de naranja y el periódico.

.5 1. Él siempre se olvida de tomar su medicina.

2. Este sofá sirve de una cama cómoda.

3. Tenemos que terminar de limpiar la casa para las cuatro y media.

4. Cada día me libro de una cosa por lo menos porque no me gusta el desorden.

5. Ella siempre se queja de trabajar tanto.

6. Me maravillo de las personas que pueden bailar bien.

7. Estoy encargado/encargada de cocinar y (tú) estás encargado/encargada de servir las comidas.

8. Con frecuencia me olvido del nombre de una persona, pero nunca me olvido de la cara.

9. Debes alejarte de personas peligrosas.

10. Acabo de leer un artículo maravilloso en el periódico.

11. ¿No tenemos jugo de naranja? Me muero de sed.

12. ¿Quién va a cuidar de tu casa la semana que viene?

13. Ellos hablan de mudarse a Omaha el año que viene.

14. No me gusta estar con él porque siempre habla mal de otras personas.

15. Hay personas que abusan de otros (or de los demás) sin remordimiento.

.6 1. Algunas personas persisten en hacer ejercicio aun cuando están enfermas.

2. María se complace en tocar la guitarra en las fiestas.

3. Primero pienso en la comida y después pienso en comer algo.

4. Cada día debemos reflexionar en algo bueno de este mundo.

5. A finales del mes, Marcos siempre se ve en un apuro.

6. Cuando llega la policía, el ladrón consiente en ir con ellos pacíficamente.

7. Las personas que chismean se meten en la vida de otras personas.

8. Juan y María quedan (or convienen) en consultar a un psiquiatra.

9. Cada año quedo en donar dinero a la Sociedad de Cáncer.

10. No debes meterte en sus problemas.

11. No estoy pensando (or pienso) en nada ahora.
 12. Mi hermana nunca se molesta en llamar por teléfono.
 13. Me intereso mucho en la política internacional.
 14. Tardo una hora en conducir (or manejar) al estadio de aquí.
 15. Para hacer ejercicio, los niños montan en bicicleta.
- .7**
1. Usualmente es muy tarde cuando me siento para estudiar.
 2. Martha Stewart dice que muchas cosas en la basura sirven para decoraciones en la casa.
 3. ¿Están listos/listas para salir (or irse)? Sí, estamos listos/listas para salir (or irnos).
 4. Estamos para almorzar.
 5. Quiero trabajar para otra compañía.
 6. ¿Quieres quedarte para mirar las noticias conmigo?
 7. Esta película no sirve para nada.
 8. Cada enero muchas personas trabajan para perder peso.
 9. Melissa necesita por lo menos dos horas para prepararse para una cita.
 10. Bjorn se prepara para encontrar un nuevo trabajo porque trabaja para un verdadero bruto.
- .8**
1. Harold se preocupa por perder los dientes y el pelo.
 2. En *Anna Karenina*, Levin lucha siempre por hacer lo correcto.
 3. El pueblo de Argentina no debe llorar por Evita.
 4. Yo miro (or me preocupo) mucho por ti.
 5. Muchas personas se ofenden por el desperdicio de comida en los restaurantes.
 6. Me muero por ver tu nuevo peinado.
 7. En esta oficina, clasificamos todo por tamaño.
 8. Usualmente un gimnasta termina por hacer algo espectacular.
 9. Ellos siempre optan por nadar en el río.
 10. Cuando tengo una elección entre dos películas, usualmente opto por la que tiene las mejores reseñas.
 11. Laura se impacienta por mudarse a otra parte del país.

11. Laura se impacienta por mudarse a otra parte del país.
12. Muchos abogados abogan por una persona culpable.
13. Te damos (las) gracias por decirnos la verdad.
14. Yo siempre clasifico mis libros por orden alfabético.
15. Ella siempre vota por el candidato menos atractivo.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Dorothy Richmond is a Spanish instructor and the author of several Spanish texts and reference works. Titles with McGraw-Hill include *Guide to Spanish Suffixes*, *The Big Red Book of Spanish Vocabulary* (coauthor), and the following titles in the “Practice Makes Perfect” series: *Spanish Verb Tenses* (first and second editions), *Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions* (first and second editions), *Spanish Vocabulary*, and *Basic Spanish*. Ms. Richmond holds degrees in Linguistics, Philosophy, and Educational Administration. She lives in Minneapolis, Minnesota, with her husband and two daughters.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Dorothy Richmond is a Spanish instructor and the author of several Spanish texts and reference works. Titles with McGraw-Hill include *Guide to Spanish Suffixes*, *The Big Red Book of Spanish Vocabulary* (coauthor), and the following titles in the “Practice Makes Perfect” series: *Spanish Verb Tenses* (first and second editions), *Spanish Pronouns and Prepositions* (first and second editions), *Spanish Vocabulary*, and *Basic Spanish*. Ms. Richmond holds degrees in Linguistics, Philosophy, and Educational Administration. She lives in Minneapolis, Minnesota, with her husband and two daughters.